TWENTY-YEAR-LONG ANTI-JAPANESE REVOLUTION UNDER THE RED SUNRAYS

2

TWENTY-YEAR-LONG ANTI-JAPANESE REVOLUTION UNDER THE RED SUNRAYS

2

(September 1931 — February 1936)

Kim Il, Choe Hyon, Pak Sung Chul, O Jin U,
So Chol, Rim Chun Chu, O Baek Ryong,
Chon Mun Sop, Han Ik Su, Pak Yong Sun

Foreign Languages Publishing House
Pyongyang, Korea
1982

CONTENTS

I. FIRST SALVO OF GREAT ANTI-JAPANESE WAR BOOMS 1

1. December Mingyuegou Meeting 1

2. Founding of Anti-Japanese People's Guerrilla Army 11

(1) Oppose Armed Force with Armed Force! 11

(2) Birth of Independent Revolutionary Armed Force 28

(3) Leading the First Contingent of the AJPGA 48

3. The Establishment of Guerrilla Zones 65

(1) The Stronghold of Revolution 65

(2) The Wangjaesan Meeting 72

II. THE TUMAN RIVER GUERRILLA ZONE—THE STRATEGIC CENTRE FOR THE KOREAN REVOLUTION 87

1. A New Society in the Tuman River Area 87

(1) The Establishment of a Real People's Government 87

(2) Guidance to the Work of Party, YCLK and Other Mass Organizations . 100

(3) For the Building Up of Reserve Forces for the Revolution 115

(4) Conversion of Guerrilla Zones into Impregnable Fortresses 124

2. Holding Aloft the Banner of Anti-Japanese Allied Front 146

(1) Luozigou Negotiations 146

(2) For the Consolidation of the Anti-Japanese Allied Front 161

(3) Attack on Dongning County Seat 170

3. The Initiative Firm in Hand 183

(1) Battle in Defence of Xiaowangqing 183

(2) The Frustration of the "Siege-and-Attack" Operations 199

(3) Constant Care for the People in Guerrilla Zones 211

4. Ordeals Tided Over 223

(1) In Snow-covered North Manchuria 223

(2) In Order to Deliver the Korean Revolution from Crisis 232

III. SPREADING THE FLAMES OF ARMED STRUGGLE OVER VAST AREAS 245

1. Relinquishing of Guerrilla Zones 245

2. The Second March into North Manchuria 256

(1) Prior to the March 256

(2) Crossing the Laoye Range 266

(3) At the New Area of Activities 276

I. FIRST SALVO OF GREAT ANTI-JAPANESE WAR BOOMS

1. DECEMBER MINGYUEGOU MEETING

The revolutionary storm was approaching the colonial East.

On September 18, 1931 the Japanese imperialists perpetrated the brigandish "Manchurian Incident", and thus finally embarked upon the road of realizing their long-cherished ambition of conquering the Asian Continent.

Their invasion of Manchuria rapidly changed the revolutionary situation.

Contradictions became extremely acute between revolution and counterrevolution on the continent, and hundreds of millions of oppressed people stood at the crossroads of life and death.

Resisting Japanese imperialism became a vital question for not only the Korean people but also the Chinese people, and a decisive struggle against the imperialist aggressors posed itself as an urgent task for all the oppressed peoples in Asia.

At that time, when the whole of Manchuria was caught up in the flames of the aggressive war ignited by Japanese imperialism, the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung was busy with his activities in the areas around Mingyuegou, Yanji County, where we (Kim Il, Pak Sung Chul and Rim Chun Chu) were active.

With his keen insight he grasped the situation created by the "Manchurian Incident". He decided that it was the proper time to start an armed struggle, and called a meeting of Party and Young Communist League of Korea (YCLK) cadres at Mingyuegou on December 16, 1931.

Summoned by the respected leader, over 40 Party and

YCLK cadres, including Li Gwang, O Jung Hwa, O Jung Song, Pak Hun, Ku Bong Un, Kim Chol, Kim Jung Gwon, Kim Il Hwan, Kim Il Ryong, Kim Jong Ryong and O Bin, came from Jilin, Antu, Wangqing, Yanji, Helong, Hunchun, Dunhua, etc.

The meeting was held at a lonely farmhouse in a valley near Mingyuegou, and lasted for over 10 days.

The core members of the Red Guards and Children's Vanguard selected by the local Party and YCLK organizations kept a watch over the mouth of the valley up to the hilltop.

At the meeting the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung made a historic speech *On Organizing and Waging Armed Struggle against Japanese Imperialism.*

To begin with, he clearly analysed the internal and external situation and the historical lessons of our people's anti-Japanese national-liberation movement. Declaring that the anti-Japanese armed struggle should be organized and waged, he said:

"The present tense revolutionary situation, which has been brought about by the Japanese imperialist occupation of Manchuria, urgently demands that we take up arms.

"Now is the best time to undertake an anti-Japanese war on a mass scale by waging an armed struggle."

The obtaining situation was indeed favourable for such an undertaking.

Simultaneously with launching aggression on the continent, the Japanese imperialists intensified their all-round repression against the Korean people in order to "secure the rear".

Our people's resistance to their barbarous suppression and harsh plunder was intensified further day by day and developed gradually into a violent struggle.

In the general strike of the dock-workers in Wonsan, strikes of the workers at the Sinhung Coal Mine and Pyongyang Rubber Factory, the peasants' struggle in Tanchon and on the Fuji Farm of Ryongchon, the Kwangju Student Incident and various other struggles, the workers, peasants and students violently resisted the Japanese imperialist aggressors.

In step with the struggles of the people in the homeland, Korean peasants' struggle rapidly gained momentum in east Manchuria, too.

The large-scale well-organized autumn harvest struggle waged under the guidance of the great leader, involving more than 100,000 peasants, developed into a violent struggle, dealing a heavy blow to Japanese imperialism and reactionary landlords.

This situation urgently demanded that the mounting violent struggle of the masses be organized and developed into an armed struggle.

The Japanese occupation of Manchuria also drove the corrupt and incompetent reactionary rulers of China into hopeless confusion and brought unbearable sufferings to the Chinese people.

The Kuomintang regime of China and the reactionary warlords of northeast China, overawed by the Japanese imperialists' invasion, continuously insisted on "absolute non-resistance" and took the road of capitulationism even though a vast territory was occupied by the enemy and the whole of Manchuria was being enveloped in the conflagration.

The people of China, however, did not remain indifferent to the barbarities of the Japanese imperialists. Their anti-Japanese sentiments mounted rapidly, and a large number of patriotic men of the Chinese Northeastern Army embarked upon the anti-Japanese war of resistance.

Consequently, while the Kuomintang administration was rapidly collapsing in Manchuria, Japanese imperialist rule was not established there yet, and this led to a state of anarchy. Meanwhile the Chinese people rose up in the massive anti-Japanese national-liberation movement. This created favourable international circumstances to start an anti-Japanese revolutionary war.

On the basis of a scientific analysis of the obtaining situation, the great leader set forth a strategic line on mobilizing the whole Korean nation for an anti-Japanese armed struggle. He said:

"The time has come when everyone should come out, weapons in hand, in the dedicated struggle to restore their country. Let us fully mobilize all the patriotic forces opposed to Japanese imperialism irrespective of wealth or poverty, partisanship and religion, whether nobles or commoners."

This was a wise course to bring nearer the country's liberation by organizing and mobilizing the whole nation for the anti-Japanese revolutionary war on the basis of the successes already achieved in the struggle to carry out the line of anti-Japanese armed struggle.

Then, the great leader advanced a strategic line on waging the armed

struggle with guerrilla warfare as its main form:

"Guerrilla warfare is a method of armed struggle which will enable us to deal heavy political and military blows to the enemy while preserving our own forces, and to defeat the numerically or technically superior enemy even with small forces. Only when we organize and launch armed struggle using guerrilla warfare, while relying on the active support and encouragement of the masses of the people and the favourable conditions of nature and terrain, are we fully capable of defeating the piratical Japanese imperialist aggressive forces."

This strategic line was not only most scientific and superb, but also accorded with the specific features and requirements of the national-liberation war to defeat the stronger enemy and achieve the country's liberation and independence with our own efforts even without forming a national army or getting support from outside under the imperialist occupation.

In his speech the great leader explained concrete ways and means and the immediate tasks of the armed struggle.

He said that for organizing and waging the armed struggle, first of all, it was necessary to set up one's own revolutionary armed forces capable of defeating the enemy's counterrevolutionary forces, and taught that the Anti-Japanese People's Guerrilla Army (AJPGA) should be founded.

He added:

"It must become a genuine people's army, made up of the fine sons and daughters of workers and peasants; it must become a genuine revolutionary army equipped with Marxist-Leninist ideas, and fighting for the country's liberation, the people's freedom and happiness. The guerrilla army must become a political army which not only fights for the people's interests but educates, organizes and mobilizes them in the revolutionary struggle; and it must become a working-class army which is true not only to the Korean revolution but to the world revolution."

Thus, the great leader described the character and mission of the AJPGA, and then explained in detail the principles of building it and the ways and means for obtaining arms.

He stressed that the guerrilla army should be formed with advanced workers, peasants and patriotic youth trained and tested in the practical revolutionary struggle, with fine young communists tempered and tested

in the severe trials of the underground revolutionary struggle as its core, and that it should fight to constantly strengthen its ranks in close relation with the revolutionary advance of the masses.

And he taught that in order to properly discharge its mission, the leadership of communists over it should be firmly ensured, and its ranks be consolidated politically and militarily.

The great leader went on to say that the AJPGA should obtain arms by its own efforts, and taught that the only way to obtain arms was to capture them from the enemy, while, at the same time, striving to manufacture weapons by its own efforts.

Next, he presented a line of establishing a guerrilla base:

"A solid guerrilla base will make it possible to continually expand the armed ranks and wage protracted guerrilla warfare even when besieged by the formidable enemy. It will also make it possible for us to protect the revolutionary masses from the cold-blooded murder and barbarity of the enemy. In particular, as we fight the armed struggle with no state backing and no aid from outside, we badly need our own firm military base, a rear base. Furthermore, this base is absolutely necessary in order to progress with preparations for the founding of the Communist Party and the revolutionary movement as a whole, while waging armed struggle."

The great leader said that the guerrilla base might take different forms according to the prevailing subjective and objective situation, the environment and conditions of the struggle and the degree of preparedness of the armed forces, and made clear the forms and tasks of the guerrilla base, the conditions to be provided for it in the form of liberated zone and the stages of building the base.

He also made an analysis of the composition of the people living in the areas along the Tuman River, the level of their national and class awakening and the topographical features and the advantage of the geographical situation, and taught that the guerrilla zone—the guerrilla base in the form of a liberated zone—should be set up in mountain regions and revolutionized rural areas along the Tuman River.

In his speech, the great leader also taught that in order to organize and wage armed struggle, there must be a mass basis on which the guerrilla army could rely in its activities, and said that the positive participation and support and encouragement of the masses were a basic condition for

constantly expanding and strengthening the guerrilla army and guaranteeing the victory of the guerrilla warfare.

Continuing, he stressed that through energetic organizational and political work among the masses, their rising revolutionary spirit and anti-Japanese sentiments should be brought into full play so as to form an anti-Japanese united front embracing the whole nation and lay the mass basis for the armed struggle.

And then the great leader taught that a broad anti-Japanese united front of the Korean and Chinese peoples should be formed for the success of the armed struggle against Japanese imperialism.

Saying that the Japanese occupation of Manchuria roused the indignation of the Chinese people, he emphasized that only by forming a united front with broad anti-Japanese forces of the Chinese people was it possible to combine the efforts of the Korean and Chinese peoples to the utmost and deal stronger political and military blows at the aggressors.

The great leader noted that the pressing task in forming this united front of the Korean and Chinese peoples was to organize a joint front with men of the Chinese Northeastern Army who have risen up under the banner of anti-Japanese national liberation. And he taught in detail about its significance, the difficulties arising in forming the joint front and the principles we should hold fast to in forming it.

Besides, he set forth the task of organizing detached units in the regions of Wangqing and Antu where the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units had gathered, as an organizational measure for actively winning them over.

In conclusion, he put forward the task of stepping up the organizational work of the Party and YCLK for the successful implementation of the above-mentioned important tasks.

He said that basic Party organizations should be set up in all districts, and the work of the YCLK organizations strengthened, and taught in detail about the principled questions arising in it.

The respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung said:

"Only when the vanguard role of party organizations is enhanced and the work of the YCL further strengthened, can we successfully carry out all the tasks that will arise in organizing and waging the armed struggle and

make sound organizational and ideological preparations for founding a unified Marxist-Leninist party."

He taught that the Party organizational life should be intensified to prepare the leading core forces of the guerrilla army and the organizational backbone of the Korean Communist Party to be founded in the future, and that those workers, peasants and progressive intellectuals trained in the mass struggle should be absorbed in the basic Party organizations and given intensified Party training so as to bring them up into communist nuclei.

Touching upon the strengthening of the work of the YCLK, the great leader taught that the characteristics of young workers and peasants and other sections of youth should be studied and the organizational and political work intensified in such a way as to suit them, and that many leading core elements should be trained from among the advanced elements of young workers and peasants in all areas.

Stressing that whether or not we defeat the Japanese imperialists and realize the cause of the country's liberation by organizing and waging the armed struggle depended entirely upon how we would discharge our revolutionary tasks, he concluded his speech, saying:

"We are the revolutionaries who are determined to devote our very lives to the country's restoration and to the victory of the cause of socialism and communism.

"Whatever ordeals and difficulties stand in our way, we will fulfil the duty of the communists as revolutionaries by finally accomplishing our revolutionary tasks.

"Let us all pool our strength and come out in the armed struggle to destroy Japanese imperialism.

"Victory will surely be ours and the country's liberation achieved without fail."

As the great leader finished his speech, there was uninterrupted enthusiastic applause.

His speech calling upon the entire people to join the armed struggle moved those attending the meeting to great emotion and excitement.

In those days everybody, shocked by the "Manchurian Incident", followed the development of the situation with deep interest: Some were enraged at the non-resistance of the Chinese reactionary regime; some

worried what the situation of our people and the future of our struggle would be like when the Japanese imperialists stretched out their tentacles even to Manchuria. However, nobody could analyze and assess the rapidly changing situation so wisely.

The day of the massive anti-Japanese war—how eagerly they longed for!

Now the time for decisive struggle was near at hand when the armed enemy would be resisted with arms.

Those present at the meeting unanimously expressed their full support to the strategic lines of anti-Japanese armed struggle and the ways and means for their implementation clarified by the great leader, and resolved to thoroughly carry them out.

At the end of the meeting, everybody stood up and, shoulder to shoulder, sang with vigour the "Song of Revolution" and the "Internationale".

We are fire flaming all over,
We are the hammer breaking chains.
The red banner is the symbol of hope.
Struggle is the only slogan we shout.
...

Take up arms, the oppressed.
Throw off the yoke, slaves.
Our future is full of hope.
Let's march forward.

The villains sucking our blood
Get their voice hoarse from greed.
Our ranks grow a hundred times
In the fierce last battle we fight.

Indeed, their spirit was high enough to cross over mountains and oceans at a breath and gallant enough to destroy the stronghold of imperialism at a stroke.

They saw before their eyes the day when they would march into the

homeland flying the red flag—the glorious day of the national liberation.

Those attending the meeting shook hands firmly with each other, pledging to participate vigorously and proudly in the glorious fighting ranks of the anti-Japanese revolutionary war led by the great leader, and left for their respective posts.

Those members of the Party and the YCLK who were later informed of the discussions of the meeting through the organizations, felt their strength growing and clenched their fists firmly.

In the organizations of the Party and the YCLK respectively, we studied hard and understood, word by word, the strategic lines of the anti-Japanese armed struggle advanced by the great leader.

We seemed to clearly see the grand and detailed operation map showing the whole course of the anti-Japanese revolutionary war from its start to its final victory.

The great leader's speech at the December Mingyuegou Meeting gave perfect answers to all questions arising in waging the anti-Japanese armed struggle—the national-liberation war in a colony—the character of the anti-Japanese revolutionary war and its main combat forms, the principles of building revolutionary armed forces and the establishment of guerrilla base, the building of mass foundation for armed struggle and the formation of anti-Japanese joint front.

Bearing in mind each of the lines, we warmly recalled the great energy and effort the great leader devoted for the elaboration, formulation and completion of all those strategic and tactical lines.

After the Kalun Meeting, the great leader had formed the Korean Revolutionary Army and pushed ahead vigorously with the preparation for the armed struggle.

Thus, the nuclei of the revolutionary armed forces were being formed, military experience accumulated and the mass foundation for the armed struggle built up. For the armed struggle, however, strategy and tactics had to be worked out to firmly guarantee its victory.

Before the great leader advanced the line of anti-Japanese armed struggle, there could be no ready-made theory on the anti-imperialist revolutionary war since no one had ever thought of the national-liberation war to be waged independently by the people in colonies.

Charting the untrodden road of national-liberation war in colonies,

the great leader took upon himself the heavy burden of clarifying its strategy and tactics for the first time in history. However, he could not find even a day or an hour free to study and meditate.

The great creative activity of the respected leader had to be conducted in the grave circumstances of underground activities when he frequently visited different areas along the Tuman River, breaking through the enemy lines, and in the busy days when he sat up all night to meet workers of the revolutionary organizations from various areas and discuss many new emerging problems.

Telling with deep emotion about the great leader's tireless efforts and energies, some comrades recalled the unforgettable night when Mother Kang Ban Sok had broken twigs for the fire by wrapping them in her skirt hem for fear of disturbing her son in his deep thought; some others remembered the sleepless night he had spent on the unheated cold floor without a bedding but resting his head on a wooden pillow, hearing the paper covering the window rustling in the wind.

Somebody said with admiration that the great leader, though busy, had never casually passed by even a hill or a valley in the areas along the Tuman River, and had shown deep interest in the composition and ideological bent of the inhabitants of even a small village, and that already at that time he had had in his mind the problem of establishing guerrilla bases.

Each of the strategic lines advanced by the great leader at the December Mingyuegou Meeting was so correct and wise that all the Korean communists and revolutionary people were firmly convinced of victory in the anti-Japanese revolutionary war from its start, and cherished deep in their heart the boundless pride and honour of making a revolution under the leadership of the respected leader, great military strategist and genius of revolution.

The December Mingyuegou Meeting was, indeed, a historic meeting that clarified in an all-round way the strategic and tactical lines of the anti-Japanese revolutionary war.

Now the time came when in response to the call of the great leader, the Korean communists and patriotic people should join the sacred war for national liberation, with arms in hand.

The era of the revolutionary storm had arrived.

2. FOUNDING OF ANTI-JAPANESE PEOPLE'S GUERRILLA ARMY

(1) OPPOSE ARMED FORCE WITH ARMED FORCE!

Following the historic December Mingyuegou Meeting, the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung wisely organized and led the preparatory work for founding the AJPGA—the genuine revolutionary armed force of the people for the first time in our country.

The important problem in the preparatory work for founding the AJPGA was to enlist men and obtain arms.

In order to promote on a full scale the work of founding the AJPGA on the basis of the achievements and experience already gained in the work of training men and collecting arms, the great leader dispatched to the vast areas along the Tuman River those cadres of the Party and the YCLK who had attended the meeting, men of the Korean Revolutionary Army and political workers. And he himself went to Antu to give unified guidance to this work.

Antu was a place where, with a far-sighted plan to organize and wage the anti-Japanese armed struggle centering on the areas along the Tuman River, the great leader had pushed ahead with its preparatory work since the Spring Mingyuegou Meeting.

Therefore, in the area of Antu at that time there were not a few fine young communists personally trained by the great leader, and a solid mass foundation for the armed struggle.

In Antu, the great leader energetically guided the preparatory work for founding the AJPGA, which was going on briskly in the vast areas along the Tuman River centred on the regions of Xinglongcun, Xiaoshahe and Dashahe.

The area of Antu, where the great leader worked, was frequently visited by the political workers active in all parts of the homeland and Manchuria, and his liaison personnel were sent out almost every day.

The preparatory work for founding the AJPGA was pushed ahead rapidly.

In those days, however, there was an important problem to be solved immediately in speeding up this work, and especially in building the mass basis of the armed struggle.

There was a village near Fuerhe, located between the counties of Antu and Dunhua. It was adjacent to the areas of Xiaoshahe and Dashahe in Antu County, where the great leader was conducting his activities at that time; it was also well connected with all parts of Manchuria, as well as the region of Dunhua.

Those political workers, who came to the great leader for his instructions, and those liaison personnel dispatched by him passed by the village. And in the future too this road would be used by those youth cadres coming to Xiaoshahe in response to his call, or those recommended and sent by the revolutionary organizations in different parts of central and east Manchuria and the homeland, or those who would be the core elements of the armed ranks.

But until that time, however, our revolutionary organization had not taken root there, and the stooges and special agents of the enemy used to arrest and murder the political workers and liaison personnel passing there.

Without revolutionizing the village and taking it under our control as early as possible, it was impossible to successfully ensure the preparatory work for founding the AJPGA nor the operations of the army to be founded in the future.

The revolutionary organization had dispatched its members to the village on many occasions to revolutionize it. But the enemy's surveillance was so tight that they had all failed to settle down. There was an organization member there, but lacking experience, he could do nothing on his own.

The respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung was informed in detail of the actual conditions in the village and the activities of the political workers.

He said that the village had to be revolutionized by all means, but it was a pity that even a peasants' association had not been organized there yet. And for a while he was lost in deep thought and then said:

"I think I shall have to go there for the time being.

"So long as the village is left in the hands of the enemy, we cannot freely push ahead with the preparatory work for founding the Anti-Japanese People's Guerrilla Army, and even after the formation of the armed ranks, it won't be able to act freely."

Much concerned about the safety of the great leader, all his comrades earnestly dissuaded him, but he did not change his resolve.

Immediately, he summoned the organization member in the village, and after acquainting himself in detail with the actual conditions there, said as follows:

"When you go back, spread a rumour that you are going to hire a hand, because you lack workhands. I will go to your house as a 'hired hand'."

Putting his hand on the shoulder of the embarrassed organization member, the respected leader went on to say:

"Since we are resolved to devote our lives to the revolution, what if I play the part of a 'hired hand' for a while? Since the reactionaries are rampant in the village, a thorough camouflage is necessary. You should act well as the 'master'."

Several days later, the great leader went to the village, disguised as a "hired hand" and met the "master".

When villagers saw him, they took him to be the hired hand who was said to be coming.

Towards sunset, mounted police suddenly rushed to the village. It seemed that somebody had squealed.

The organization member was at a loss what to do.

But the great leader went out coolly into the courtyard and started chopping firewood with an axe.

After a while, the mounted police appeared in the courtyard.

Without giving them a glance, the great leader went on chopping firewood.

Pointing to him, they asked who he was. The host answered that he was his hired hand, when they looked at him attentively.

Apparently, they thought that he was a real "hired hand" and left.

Thus, the great leader escaped a dangerous moment and settled himself in the village. From the next day on, he conducted the work of revolutionizing the village as planned.

He acquainted himself in detail with the local conditions and the inclinations of the villagers and taught the organization member about the concrete direction and methods of work. Every night he summed up the work and planned the work for the next day.

According to the detailed plan of work made by the great leader himself, the organization member went among the villagers, forming a revolutionary organization and revolutionizing them.

Meanwhile, through organization members there, the great leader kept regular contact with those men of the Korean Revolutionary Army in Xiaoshahe and Dashahe and promoted, at the same time, the preparatory work for founding the AJPGA.

Since he was under the guise of a hired hand, the great leader did all the difficult and complex organizational work mainly at night. In the daytime he would do this or that hard labour, and do even what was requested by the villagers. At times, women of the village would ask him to break the ice around a well, and those houses preparing for a wedding or 60th birthday feast would want him to help in making rice-cakes. Like this, they asked him to do some chores.

Each time he saw all this, the organization member felt embarrassed and would suggest that the great leader should leave the village for now he was able to carry on the work by himself.

But the great leader, laughing heartily, would reply that it was rather good for his work that the villagers ordered him about, regarding him as a hired hand. And he inspired the organization member, saying what a noble mission was assumed by the communists who were fighting to liquidate all sorts of inequality among men, since many people were forced to do hard toil throughout their life, suffering from such insult, humiliation and maltreatment, and that the AJPGA should be organized as early as possible and thus a war be proclaimed against all political and social injustice.

In this way, the great leader formed a revolutionary organization in the village and revolutionized the villagers, braving all kinds of troubles. Then, he left the village.

Years later, when he was waging the anti-Japanese armed struggle, the great leader once again came to the village, leading a unit, and made a speech. When the villagers saw him standing on the rostrum, they were all surprised, because undoubtedly he was the man who had worked as a hired hand in the village years before.

It was only after the departure of the guerrilla unit that the villagers learned through the revolutionary organization that the great leader had conducted underground activities in their village, going through all sorts of hardships. With great emotion, they said:

"Since our village was backward, the General underwent such hardships. From now on, we should do the revolutionary work well."

They turned out as one in the work of assisting the guerrilla army.

The great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung thus overcame the difficulties in the way of struggle for preparing the founding of the AJPGA, and vigorously pushed ahead with the preparation for strengthening the ranks and obtaining arms.

The most important and primary task now was to build up the armed ranks. Without men to take up arms, it was impossible to conduct any other preparatory work, including the collection of weapons, provisions, clothing and so on. Under the conditions at that time when the revolutionary army had to be organized only by our own efforts without any state-supported rear or aid from outside, both the collection of weapons and provisions had to be done by the efforts of those who would stand in the armed ranks.

Therefore, the great leader attached primary importance to the work for building up the armed ranks and positively pushed ahead with the preparatory work for organizing the AJPGA with the young communists he had trained in person, as its backbone.

The respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung taught as follows:

"We are not starting from scratch in organizing revolutionary armed forces now.

"In the past we brought up the communists of the new generation in the organizations of the Young Communist League of Korea and the Anti-Imperialist Youth League. Thus we provided the core from which we can organize the revolutionary armed forces.

"Furthermore, last year we gained some experience and learned some

lessons by organizing the Korean Revolutionary Army and by carrying on political and military action.

"On the basis of these successes and experiences we must, first, push ahead actively with the work of organizing an Anti-Japanese People's Guerrilla Army with a core of fine young communists seasoned and tested in the crucible of the hard-fought underground revolutionary struggle. By closely combining the organization of the guerrilla army with the masses' revolutionary advance, we shall admit progressive workers and peasants as well as patriotic youth, trained and tested in the practical revolutionary struggle, and strive to continue to reinforce the ranks."

In the past the great leader had formed various forms of revolutionary organizations including the YCLK and the Anti-Imperialist Youth League (AIYL) and organized the Korean Revolutionary Army and brought up the communists of the new generation in the crucible of practical struggle. And he had also laid a solid mass basis for organizing the AJPGA with them as its core.

In order to found the AJPGA as early as possible on the basis of such achievements, the great leader, while preparing more firmly the communists of the new generation he had trained, politically and ideologically, militarily and technically, saw that the political workers dispatched to different areas met and selected the progressive workers, peasants and patriotic youth trained and tested in the practical revolutionary struggle, maintaining relations with the local revolutionary organizations.

At the same time, the great leader took revolutionary measures to further expand and strengthen the paramilitary organizations, which could train workers, peasants and patriotic youth politically and militarily in practical struggle, with a view to rapidly expanding and strengthening the armed ranks. Thus paramilitary organizations including Red Guards, Children's Vanguard and Workers' Pickets were newly organized in the vast areas along the Tuman River, or those organizations were further expanded and strengthened. Through such paramilitary organizations, reliable reserve forces grew up for rapidly expanding the armed ranks.

The great leader saw to it that with the preparation made for the formation of the armed ranks, small guerrilla groups were organized in each locality.

He taught as follows:

"We have to begin by organizing small guerrilla units in different areas and arming them, and then gradually expand them into revolutionary armed forces of large units."

While pushing ahead with the preparatory work for building the guerrilla ranks through the political workers dispatched to various parts along the Tuman River, the great leader himself set an example.

In March 1932, the great leader formed a small guerrilla unit first in Antu. Enlisted in this glorious unit were the men of the Korean Revolutionary Army trained by him including Comrade Cha Gwang Su, leading core elements tested and seasoned in the underground struggle such as Kim Il Ryong, Pak Hun, Li Yong Bae and Kim Chol Hui and fine members of the YCLK. This armed unit was small, but it was a prototype of the AJPGA to be founded in the future.

Under the guidance of the great leader, the armed unit conducted both military training and political study. And it made military preparations through the practical struggle to punish stooges, protect organizations and obtain weapons.

On the basis of his experience gained in organizing the small guerrilla unit in Antu, the great leader wisely led the extensive organization of such armed units in different areas along the Tuman River.

For those fine young men who were selected and dispatched by the revolutionary organizations of different districts along the river, the great leader organized a short-term training on the urgent questions necessary for the formation of armed units and guerrilla activities such as the organization scale of armed units and the formation of units, the order and commanding system of the army, the rules of life in the army, the basic principles of guerrilla struggle, and the content and methods of immediate training. And then, he sent them back.

Through them, he popularized the experience of the guerrilla unit he had personally organized in Antu.

Under the energetic guidance of the great leader, small armed units began to be organized in different areas along the Tuman River.

In the Wangqing area, a small guerrilla unit was formed early in the spring of 1932 with Kim Chol, Li Gwang, Ryang Song Ryong, Chang Yong San, Kim Yong Hwan and other core elements, and in the Yanji

area, in March 1932, another unit with Comrades Pak Dong Gun, Pak Gil, Rim Sung Gyu, Yu Nan Hwan and Kim Sun Dok as the core. And small guerrilla units were formed in the Hunchun area with Comrades O Bin, Kang Sok Hwan, Ryang Man Bong, An Gil, Li Bong Su, Kim Chang Hwal and others as the nucleus, and in the Helong area with Comrades Cha Yong Dok and Pak Pa as the core.

Men of the Korean Revolutionary Army (KRA) and members of the YCLK brought up by the great leader since long worked as commanding personnel and political workers of the guerrilla units organized in different areas.

The small guerrilla units did not yet launch any open activities, but made military and political preparations for the armed struggle.

In order to further solidify the mass basis for the armed struggle, while rapidly expanding and strengthening the guerrilla units, the great leader decided to organize a mass struggle against the Japanese imperialist aggressors, reactionary bureaucrats and pro-Japanese landlords in the vast areas along the Tuman River.

In these areas the subjective and objective conditions had fully matured enough for the outbreak of mass struggle.

The life of the peasants in the Jiandao area had extremely worsened that spring. In addition to the ever intensifying plunder by the Japanese imperialists and feudal landlords, 1931 saw an unprecedented crop-failure. As a result, after the winter, the absolute majority of the population were on the verge of starvation. The number of peasants who lived on grass and tree bark exceeded 150,000 in the early spring of 1932.

Unable to endure any longer, the peasants showed signs of struggle in various areas, saying that they would rather fight the enemy than sit idle to die of starvation.

Furthermore, they had the firm conviction through the Autumn Harvest Struggle that if they fought in unity, they could defeat any enemy.

On the basis of a scientific analysis of the obtaining situation and the high fighting spirit of the masses, the great leader planned to arouse the peasants once again for a massive advance and made full preparations for it.

First of all, the great leader saw to it that the struggle committees organized in different areas at the time of the Autumn Harvest Struggle

were more firmly consolidated and their correct guidance was ensured over the mass struggle.

And he saw that in order to give the enemy no pretext for open suppression, the slogan of "borrowing rice" was put up.

All the preparations for the mass struggle were made under the guidance of the great leader.

Around that time, the Japanese imperialist cutthroats barbarously murdered the staunch revolutionary fighters Li Tae Guk and Kwak Yong Hui and others in the Longjing Prison.

With this incident as an occasion, the political workers got the revolutionary organizations to widely hold memorial ceremonies to expose and denounce the atrocities of the enemy and arouse the angry people to the struggle against the Japanese imperialists.

Memorial ceremonies were held in different areas. Those attending them, gulping tears of resentment, shouted: "Down with the Japanese imperialists, the sworn enemy!", "Let all of us rise against the murderous atrocity of the Japanese imperialists against the Korean and Chinese people!" and "Let us rise bravely in the anti-Japanese national salvation struggle to avenge the murder of Li Tae Guk, Kwak Yong Hui and other patriotic martyrs!"

Taking advantage of the favourable conditions of the rapidly-heightening revolutionary spirit of the masses, the great leader saw to it that all areas switched over simultaneously to a mass struggle.

With the memorial ceremonies as a signal, the indignant peasants throughout Jiandao rose up in the struggle. More than 100,000 peasants participated in the mass struggle called "Borrow-rice Struggle" or "Spring Crisis Struggle".

Under the guidance of struggle committees, at thè beginning the peasants called on the landlords and demanded loans of food grain, shouting: "Poor and hired peasants of Korea and China demand food!" and "Lend us rice!"

But when the landlords refused to respond, the struggle committees in different areas immediately put up the slogan: "Let us destroy the storehouses of pro-Japanese landlords and reactionary landlords and distribute rice to starving poor and hired peasants of Korea and China!" and turned the course of the struggle from one to borrow rice to the

struggle to take rice. And when the Japanese imperialists and guardsmen came to put down the struggle, they organized and mobilized the masses to change gradually from economic struggle to political struggle under the slogan "Down with the Japanese imperialist aggressors!"

Thus, under the unified guidance of the great leader, the political workers dispatched by him and the struggle committees in different areas actively waged the struggle and braved the enemy's suppression and finally won a brilliant victory.

The Spring Crisis Struggle which developed from the struggle to borrow rice into a political struggle was a continuation of the Autumn Harvest Struggle; it fully enhanced the fighting spirit of the revolutionary masses.

In the crucible of the Spring Crisis Struggle, the preparatory work for founding the AJPGA was pushed ahead rapidly.

The armed units involved many members of the YCLK, Red Guards and Workers' Pickets who stood in the van of the Spring Crisis Struggle, and other vanguards who fought directly with swords and clubs in hand. The backbone of the armed units was further trained.

Along with the preparation of armed units, the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung vigorously pushed ahead with the work of obtaining arms.

He said:

"Obtaining arms is another important task to be carried out at the same time as the organization of the guerrilla army.

"Men and weapons are the two elements of the armed forces. Arming is one of the basic factors in the success of the armed struggle.

"How, then, should we equip the guerrilla army?

"We have no source of weapons, nor anyone to give them to us. Therefore, we have no alternative but to get them by our own efforts.

"The only way is to capture them from the enemy and to arm ourselves.... 'Weapons are our life and soul! Oppose armed force with armed force!' —this must become our fighting slogan at present....

"While seizing enemy weapons and arming ourselves, we must not neglect to make spears, swords, clubs and the like,...."

After advancing the militant slogan "Weapons are our life and soul! Oppose armed force with armed force!", the great leader personally organized the struggle for obtaining weapons by the men of KRA and the

young communists trained in the underground revolutionary struggle and, at the same time, wisely led all revolutionary organizations to wage a mass struggle for capturing enemy weapons.

Upholding the teachings of the great leader the Party and YCLK organizations in different areas along the Tuman River explained to organization members and broad masses his line of armed struggle and policy of obtaining weapons by one's own efforts, and vigorously waged a struggle for capturing enemy weapons by pooling the efforts and wisdom of the masses. In various places death-defying corps for obtaining arms were formed from among members of Red Guards and Children's Vanguard and appeals to the organization members and the revolutionary masses were issued.

An appeal issued by a revolutionary organization said:

"The proletarian youth who have been deprived of fathers, mothers, brothers and sisters! Let's turn out to the general front of the proletarian class, grinding teeth and clenching fists, with fighting spirit as firm as diamond and revenge upon the enemy in the life-and-death struggle!... Weapons are our life and soul....

"Unite! Get ready! Mobilize all for the line of arms!"

This ardent appeal shows with what resolute determination the revolutionary organizations and masses rose up in the struggle for arms in those days.

As a matter of fact, to arm oneself by capturing enemy's weapons with bare hands is very difficult, some times demanding the supreme sacrifice. However, they turned out to the struggle for capturing weapons without hesitation, ready to die for it.

The weapon-capturing struggle was waged almost at the same time in the vast areas along the Tuman River including Wangqing, Yanji, Helong and Hunchun.

In the rural villages such as Damulugou and Shangjingli and in the enemy-infested towns such as Longjing, Daduchuan and Sandaogou, a valiant struggle was unfolded to capture weapons.

In this struggle were mobilized the members of the YCLK and Red Guards, members of Children's Vanguard and Women's Association, and even old men in their sixties.

The revolutionary organizations in different areas organized bold

and valiant struggle everywhere, guided by the great leader's teaching that in the revolutionary spirit of self-reliance, they should prepare arms for the AJPGA to be founded by capturing weapons from the Japanese imperialist aggressor army, the Chinese Northeastern Army which had surrendered to the Japanese imperialists, from policemen of Japan and northeast China, vicious reactionary landlords and bureaucrats.

One day in early 1932, the Red Guards of Dalazi district of Helong County boldly ambushed Japanese gendarmes and captured their arms, meanwhile in Hunchun County, the Dahuanggou police sub-station was raided and 13 rifles were obtained.

In Wangqing County through bold and surprise attack on the Dakanzi police sub-station, Shixian Self-Defence Corps and other enemy-infested places more than 20 rifles were captured in one or two months at the beginning of 1932.

In early January 1932, in Yanji County, several revolutionary organization members went over to Dongshengyong and attacked the Japanese imperialist police there, and captured lots of weapons.

The YCLK branches in Nanxian district, Bagou, Yanji County, to which I (Rim Chun Chu) belonged, mapped out a concrete plan and in three days captured all the rifles and hunting guns from the reactionary landlords nearby.

The YCLK members in Nanxian district, Bagou, successfully captured weapons by raiding the house of the landlord living in the southeast in Julbawi on a night, and next day they broke up into three groups and attacked many landlords going from Chaoyangchuan Street up to Tongfosi thereby capturing some 20 weapons overnight.

Early next morning they lay in ambush by the gate of the landlord's house in Hedong near Longjing, watching for an opportunity. When the hired hands of the landlord opened the gate to come out for drawing water, they quickly rushed in, awoke the landlord who was still in bed, and demanded his weapons.

With his weapons concealed well, he stubbornly insisted that he had none.

The YCLK members persuaded him, saying:

"We know that you have weapons, why do you tell a lie? We are patriots fighting against the Japanese imperialist aggressors, the enemy of

both Korean and Chinese peoples. If you give us your weapons, they will smash the Japs in the end, and if you don't they will go into the hands of the Japs. If you are not a Japanese lackey, you should give us your weapons. But if you are one, you should be punished in the name of the people."

Their ardent appeal changed the landlord's mind.

Saying "If you are really fighting against Japan, I'll give you weapons," he moved a chest aside, and produced a rifle, three pistols and a lot of ammunition from the dark cell under it.

The YCLK members not only got weapons but also made the landlord a "sympathizer" of the revolution, and left the house.

In this way, the YCLK members of Nanxian district, Bagou, captured 25 rifles, hunting guns and pistols in three days, and they armed themselves.

The members of the YCLK, the Red Guards and the Children's Vanguard in their struggle for obtaining weapons displayed heroism, boldness and matchless self-sacrificing spirit and thus demonstrated to the full the indomitable spirit of our people fighting under the leadership of the great leader.

The members of the Red Guards of Taiyangmao, Yanji County, including Yun Chang Bom and Pang Jong Jun pretended to be officials from the county public security bureau engaged in weapon investigation and captured three pieces—a revolver, rifle and hunting gun owned by the vicious landlord of Xiaodonggou. A member of the Children's Vanguard dispatched as a farmhand for a landlord in Xinxingdong, Yanji County, brought a brazier with bombs in it to six enemy railway guardsmen who had come in to dry their clothes on a rainy day, and wiped them out with the help of local revolutionary organization and captured six rifles.

Old man O Tae Hui and his brother in Shixian with a pistol made of a table leg captured the weapons from a policeman wearing a sword and a stooge shouldering a rifle and sent them to the guerrilla unit.

Comrades Pak Su Wan and Kim Su Bok, who later displayed their bravery as women members of the Korean People's Revolutionary Army (KPRA), were YCLK members of the Jiemangou village in those days. They captured a weapon by killing a policeman with washing clubs while washing clothes on the river.

Like this, the struggle for obtaining weapons was conducted in a bold and novel way. It was a wisdom and sagacity born of the fighting zeal of the organization members and the revolutionary masses, their burning hatred for the enemy and matchless self-sacrificing spirit.

To capture weapons by attacking the enemy almost empty-handed, only with spears, sticks or chilli powder bags was a do-or-die struggle that was possible only when one is prepared for death, and in this course we lost many fine core members and the youth vanguard fighters.

Five members of the Children's Vanguard in Yaoshuidong had obtained scores of weapons by bold tactics. One day on their way back from Bajiazhuang, where they had gone to seize weapons, they were surprised by the enemy at a Chinese restaurant. They quickly took their weapons and slipped out, but they were pursued by the enemy.

They rushed towards the paddy-fields under fierce shooting. The platoon commander who was in the rear, delaying the enemy, was hit by a bullet and sustained a serious wound and fell down.

His comrades rushed back to save him.

But he handed over his pistol to his comrades giving them a strict order:

"Comrades, quickly slip out with this pistol!" Then he rushed in another direction with his last breath to lure the enemy. The enemy followed him.

He was only 15 years old, but he gave up his precious youth and life to save the revolutionary comrades and the weapons of revolution.

Really, each weapon we obtained at the cost of the priceless blood of the revolutionary soldiers immensely faithful to the great leader.

Meanwhile, upholding the instructions of the great leader on arming ourselves with weapons captured from the enemy and, at the same time, not neglecting the struggle to make our own, we displayed high revolutionary spirit of self-reliance and made many chilli bombs, spears and swords.

As a result, the small guerrilla groups formed in different areas were able to arm themselves and expand constantly the ranks in a short span of time.

The struggle for obtaining weapons was the bloodiest during the preparatory period for the founding of the AJPGA and in its course the

gallant YCLK members and the Red Guards members fostered their indomitable will and courage and gained valuable military experience in surprising and luring the enemy.

The small guerrilla units were formed in different areas along the Tuman River and the revolutionary advance of the masses of the people strengthened day by day under the energetic guidance of the great leader. The Japanese imperialist aggressors were filled with fear and misgivings and they clearly realized that they were standing on an active volcano which would erupt again any time, even though they had occupied this land by force of arms.

To free themselves from this misgiving and fear they set up the puppet "Manchukuo" in March 1932, formed the "Manchukuo Army" (the puppet Manchukuo Army) with a view to suppress the patriotic activities of the Korean and Chinese peoples in Manchuria and hurled many Japanese imperialist aggressor troops and police forces at east Manchuria. Realizing that it was impossible to hold in check the revolutionary advance of the Korean people thus, the Japanese imperialists formed and dispatched the "Task Force in Jiandao" in early April 1932 on the order of the Ministry of Army of Japan.

The "Task Force in Jiandao" was formed with the main force of the 19th Division stationed at Ranam in Korea, its command was entrusted to the commander of the 75th Regiment, a notorious butcher.

Early in April this huge armed force started to come to the rural areas of Wangqing and Hunchun, Yanji and Helong across the Tuman River.

"If you kill one hundred Koreans you may find one of them will be a Communist Party member or YCLK member", "Kill the Koreans ruthlessly"—clamouring like this the Japanese imperialist butchers turned the Korean villages in the Jiandao area into a sea of fire, a sea of blood.

One of its units which had intruded into the Wangqing area rushed to Dakanzi through Tumen. On April 6, the day of its arrival, the unit put Dakanzi to the fire and sword. Hundreds were killed in Deyuanli and Dongyicun. Seeing the fierce smoke and flames rising in Deyuanli and Dongyicun, peasants in the neighbouring villages were livid with indignation. But on the following day, they had to meet the same miserable fate.

In Donglingdong, there were more than 90 farmhouses. But after the "Task Force in Jiandao" passed through, not a single house was standing.

The whole village had been reduced to ashes.

Everywhere they went, these marauders conducted the scorched-earth operation, setting fire to everything and murdering all people—men and women, young and old.

Qiujiacun was a big village with more than 250 farmhouses and a primary school. Here the enemy set fire to over 200 farmhouses, murdered over a half of the inhabitants, and arrested 45 YCLK members, locked them in a house and burnt them alive.

In Kolbanggol where I(O Baek Ryong) lived, the enemy set fire to tens of farmhouses, except the house of the village head man, and committed the atrocity of stabbing the innocent peasants with bayonets so ruthlessly that they were totally disfigured and unrecognizable.

The Japanese imperialists were vicious murderers and a band of bloodsuckers. These wolves in human form killed our people in the most merciless and inhuman manner.

They shot the people and stabbed them with bayonets. Still not satisfied, they usually committed the thrice-cursed atrocities of burning people to death or burying them alive in groups.

In Yongchangdong, the enemy arrested 5 organization members including Comrades O Jung Ok and Yu Se Ryong, pierced their palms with iron wire, set them on piled-up firewood, poured petrol and burned them alive. It was terrible indeed.

However, even from the burning pyre, they said in ringing tones to the masses that they should fight without yielding, as the victory of the revolution was just ahead. They shouted again and again: "Long live the Korean revolution!" The devilish enemy fired at them with machine guns.

Men of the "Task Force in Jiandao" who had intruded into the Hunchun area stealthily encircled Shajingou village at night and waited for daybreak. When the village women began to come out with water jars to fetch water for cooking rice, the enemy raided firing in volleys and massacred all the villagers. The enemy committed hair-raising atrocities of beating old men and children to death with rifle butts and killing women by cutting off their breasts.

In the same period, the enemy who had crept into the Helong area waited until the inhabitants in Almidae fell asleep, and suddenly raided the village and murdered all of them and burned down the whole village.

Thus, Almidae was turned into an empty valley.

All this was what took place in the initial days of the mopping-up operation.

By the end of that year, the "Task Force in Jiandao", a group of bloodsuckers, had murdered more than 10,000 innocent people in the Yanji area alone. Innumerable were the crimes committed by the enemy in the whole of the Jiandao area. Many villages were reduced to ashes and tens of thousands of innocent people killed.

Among them, there were not a few fine vanguard fighters who had been brought up under the guidance of the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung and stood in the van of underground struggle and mass struggle. To the last moment of their life, they bravely fought for the victory of the Korean revolution and died a heroic death.

Comrade Ku Bong Un, who had conducted underground work in the Yanji area for a long time, was arrested and taken to the execution ground. The enemy encircled him and alternately induced or threatened him, saying that if he betrayed the secret of the revolutionary organization, they would let him live and if not, kill him.

But he cast a derisive smile on the enemy, and firmly said in fluent Japanese to the soldiers of the "Task Force in Jiandao": "Deceived by the superiors, you are mobilized to commit the crime of killing the innocent people of Korea and China. Why do you murder these people? They are waging a just struggle against the aggressors. They will certainly overthrow the Japanese imperialists through their brotherly unity; the Japanese imperialists, the bloodsuckers, will be certainly ruined, driven into the abyss of crimes committed by themselves. The Japanese imperialists are the unpardonable enemy of the Korean and Chinese people. But broad proletarian masses of Japan are not our enemy. Like us, they are also bled white by the Japanese imperialists. We regard them as our friends." Hearing what he said, the soldiers and even officers hung their heads. Saying that they were forced to kill him as ordered by superiors, they shot him to death.

In the Yanji area alone, the Japanese imperialist murderers arrested and killed many fine communists boundlessly faithful to the great leader.

The enemy applied all kinds of appeasement and deception, inhuman tortures to our revolutionaries, but they kept the secrets of the organi-

zation with great stubbornness. To the last moment of their life, they sharply denounced the crimes of the murderers without breaking the principle of the revolution and died a heroic death, convinced of the victory of the Korean revolution led by the great leader.

Really, the whole of Jiandao turned into a sea of blood, soaked in the precious crimson blood shed by the vanguard fighters and by the revolutionary masses boundlessly faithful to the great leader.

But their blood was not spilled in vain! The Japanese imperialist murderers schemed to attain their aggressive aim and to put down the anti-Japanese sentiment of the people through their barbarous atrocities. But our people renewed their firm resolve to oppose arms with arms, pay blood with blood, holding weapons in hands under the leadership of the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung, and rose up resolutely in the fight against the enemy with indomitable fighting spirit.

The enemy could soak the whole of Jiandao in a sea of blood, but they could not hold in check the vigorous grand march of our people along the road of armed struggle led by the great leader.

More and more youth, with the resolve to sacrifice their lives to avenge their beloved parents and brothers and sisters, and for the liberation of the country and freedom and happiness of the people, came to join the AJPGA being founded by the great leader.

Cherishing the urgent demand of the times and the burning desire of our people, the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung pushed forward more dynamically with the work for the founding of the AJPGA.

(2) BIRTH OF INDEPENDENT REVOLUTIONARY ARMED FORCE

The anti-Japanese revolutionary war was just beginning.

The armed personnel were ready, weapons had been collected and the mass foundation of the armed struggle had been laid.

But there was a crucial problem yet to be solved before proclaiming the founding of the AJPGA to the whole world and launching its open

activities. It was the formation of joint front with Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units.

At that time the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units formed a considerable force in the northeast area of China.

Following the September 18 Incident Zhang Xueliang, chief of the Chinese Northeastern Army, ran away to China proper via Jinzhou and though the Chinese Northeastern Army under his command crumbled, many patriotic rank-and-file soldiers and some officers held the forest zones and rural areas in all parts of Manchuria under the anti-Japanese save-the-nation banner. They numbered hundreds of thousands.

Wang Delin formed the "National Salvation Army" immediately after the September 18 Incident in Yanji where we (Kim Il, Choe Hyon, Pak Sung Chul, Rim Chun Chu) were living. At the beginning, it was about the size of a brigade but in less than half a year its number was tens of thousands and its troops were spreading over various counties east of Jilin.

At that time the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit under the command of Tang Juwu was operating in vast areas of south Manchuria under the name of "Self-defence Army."

Besides, the peasants' armed units such as the "Red Spear Society" and "Broad Sword Society" also upheld the anti-Japanese banner. The former was a unit armed with red-striped spears and the latter, a unit armed with long swords.

But these Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units generally showed a hostile attitude towards the Korean communists. This was due to their political backwardness and the class prejudice of the bosses of propertied class origin. It was also an outcome of the crafty manoeuvres of creating division between nations of the Japanese imperialists who had cooked up the "Wanbaoshan incident" and the "Association for the Promotion of Yanbian Autonomy". The Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units displayed a hostile feeling not only towards the Korean communists but all Koreans. They thought that the "Koreans were cat's paws of Japanese imperialism" and that the Koreans invaded Manchuria along with the Japanese imperialists.

The anti-Japanese units moved into the unoccupied mountain rural areas, hard pressed by the strong armed force of Japanese imperialism.

This was a great menace to the Korean people. Some anti-Japanese units often attacked Korean villages and arrested Korean youth and murdered them en masse.

The situation became worse due to the crimes of the "Left" opportunists. Already at the time of the May 30 Uprising they had given the enemy the pretext for vile propaganda with their ultra-"Leftist" activity. Thus the enemy propagated the "Korean communists are murderers and arsonists" and the "Korean communists are the robbers who set fire to the stacks of grain of the Chinese." Later, too, the "Left" opportunists put forward such extremist slogans as "revolution of the proletarian class" and "proletarian dictatorship" and thus providing an alibi to the Japanese imperialists' "anti-communist" propaganda and even instigated the capture of weapons of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese soldiers, aggravating the relations with their units.

On the pretext of solving the problem of weapons the aged "Leftist" element Song stirred up young people to surprise five Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit soldiers stationed in Tuntianying, Sandaowan, and captured five rifles.

Such provocative acts roused the enmity of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese soldiers and stirred them to foolish retaliation.

Owing to the vicious divisive acts of Japanese imperialism and the ultra-"Leftist" acts of the "Left" opportunists, the soldiers of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units regarded the Korean communists as their "enemy". Thus the Korean communists were exposed to constant threat not only from the Japanese imperialist aggressors but also from the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units.

All parts were held by the enemy, for large cities and the areas along railway lines had already been occupied by the Japanese imperialist aggressor army and the mountain cities and rural areas were held by the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units.

The great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung considered that without overcoming such a situation, it would be impossible to proclaim the founding of the AJPGA.

In fact, the small armed units formed in various regions at that time were unable to conduct open activities, but restricted to secret activities and even that only in the regions inhabited by Koreans.

But it was impossible to regard the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units as enemy.

Though their stand against Japanese imperialism was not thoroughgoing and they were constantly wavering in face of the strong armed force of the enemy, still as they are upholding the anti-Japanese banner, they could neither be regarded as enemy, nor should they be turned into enemy.

The great leader believed that due to their own political backwardness and ignorance the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units were causing great damage to the Korean communists, but as they had risen with arms in hand against Japanese imperialism, it would be possible to rally them around the anti-Japanese joint front if they were boldly approached and worked with perseveringly.

In order to tide over the hardships in the way of the founding of the AJPGA, the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung called a meeting of the leaders of revolutionary organizations in Xiaoshahe, Antu County, early in April of 1932.

At the meeting the great leader analysed the problems hindering the founding of the AJPGA and explained the significance of overcoming the hostility of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, the biggest immediate obstacle.

Therefore, he said, it was necessary to intensify the work with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units to form the anti-Japanese joint front and thus deal a blow at the Japanese imperialists' divisive policy and create a favourable condition for the founding of the AJPGA and the start of the anti-Japanese war in an all-out way.

To plan the formation of the anti-Japanese joint front under the then difficult situation when the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit soldiers wantonly arrested and slaughtered those Korean communists they came across, was a great resolute decision that could be made only by the great leader who looked far into the future of the revolution with vast magnanimity.

This bold line opened the way to convert hundreds of thousands of armed forces into comrades-in-arms.

This line also gave us who were then in the armed ranks boundless admiration and joy.

But by what means to solve this dangerous and difficult problem?

The participants in the meeting turned their eyes to the great leader.

In order to form the joint front with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, it was necessary, first of all, to meet the leaders of the units and remove their misunderstandings through negotiations with them, the great leader said, and expressed his resolve to visit the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit in person.

This startled all those present at the meeting who were keenly listening to him.

To visit the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit in the then appalling atmosphere meant to risk life.

There was no limit to the tyranny of the commanders of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units and the anti-Japanese soldiers, too, acted recklessly due to their ignorance.

Out of concern about the safety of the great leader, who shouldered the destiny of the Korean revolution upon himself, all those at the meeting as one told him to entrust to themselves the task to call on the leaders of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units.

Looking around at them, he said as follows:

"If we fear danger, how can we make the revolution? We must overcome danger with confidence. As the revolution demands it, we must not hesitate on the way we should go along."

Some days after the conclusion of the Xiaoshahe Meeting, the great leader resolutely decided upon a visit to Commander Wei's unit, one of the most influential Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units in the area along the Tuman River. At that time, the headquarters of Commander Wei's unit was located at the seat of Antu County.

In order to ensure the safety of the respected leader, many people volunteered to accompany him, but he left with only three or four men.

The soldiers of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units were everywhere.

On the top of a pass near Dashahe, the great leader came across a unit of the National Salvation Army. It numbered several hundred. All of them were in high spirits. They were coming nearer, making much ado and carrying a multi-coloured flag with the inscriptions: "Commander Wei."

They were soldiers of Commander Wei's unit.

The great leader greeted them with delight and asked them about the whereabouts of Commander Wei. But the wild soldiers immediately encircled his party and attempted to arrest them.

In order to restrain their rash action, he said:

"We are men engaged in the anti-Japanese movement. We are going to meet your commander."

Overawed by his dignified words, the soldiers hesitated. But they asked him again if they were not Koreans. The soldiers showed signs of wanting to assault them if they were Koreans.

The respected leader resolutely said:

"You're right. We are Koreans. We are men fighting against the Japanese. Quickly lead us to your commander."

The soldiers dared not ask any more questions, and led him to a nearby farmhouse. There their chief of staff was taking rest. He was greatly surprised to see the great leader coming in with the soldiers.

The chief of staff of Commander Wei's unit had once worked as a teacher in Jilin and Dunhua. Since then he had respected the unusual personality and virtues of the great leader who was fully enjoying the confidence of the youth and students.

The chief of staff met him with great joy and apologized for the rash behaviour of his soldiers.

Heaving a deep sigh, the chief of staff said:

"Since the situation in the country was too difficult, I took up arms even though I was a scholar knowing nothing but learning, but I am very diffident as they know nothing and act recklessly."

The great leader was pleased to meet the chief of staff.

He encouraged the former teacher who had donned the military uniform to free the country, saying: "Under the condition where the peoples of Korea and China are suffering alike because of the Japanese imperialist aggressors, they must pool efforts and fight to drive out the Japs. But the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units fail to understand the struggle of the Korean communists and people and show hostility towards them. It is a great pity. The Korean communists and the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units stand on one and the same front against the common enemy. Why, then, should there be such hostility? It is clear that such a phenomenon will harm the cause of anti-Japanese national

salvation, and will only please the Japanese imperialists, isn't it?"

Expressing full agreement with the words of the great leader, the chief of staff frankly said that though he was now in an important position of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit, he never justified the acts of the commander and soldiers.

He expressed admiration and support for the plan of the great leader to form an anti-Japanese joint front and pledged that he would join his own efforts for its realization.

The chief of staff took him to the seat of Antu County where Commander Wei was, and soon their meeting took place.

Commander Wei was the most inexorable man among the chiefs of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units. He boasted that he had once engaged the Japs near Jingbo Lake, and acted arrogantly. His men were also arrogant because they were influenced by him.

But having been already informed of the fame of the great leader from the chief of staff, Commander Wei courteously greeted him and took a cautious attitude towards his proposal to form an anti-Japanese joint front.

The respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung explained to Commander Wei the purpose of the just struggle of the Korean communists and said that for destroying huge armed forces of the Japanese imperialists, all the anti-Japanese forces of the Korean and Chinese peoples should unite and fight with organized forces. He said:

"Unity redoubles strength and disunity reduces strength to a half. This is a truth no one can deny. The Korean people were the first to suffer at the hands of the Japanese imperialists, and now the Chinese people are also suffering. Why, then, can the peoples of the two countries not fight together? The enemy fears the unity of the peoples of the two countries more than anything else, and resorts to all kinds of plots to separate them from each other. All the false propaganda of the Japanese imperialists against the Korean communists proceeds from this. We must not be carried away by the tricks of the enemy."

As the great leader explained repeatedly, Commander Wei said he

agreed that unity redoubles strength, but he could not understand why the communists should be considered as friends.

Commander Wei asked: "The Korean communists once staged a 'riot', set fire to stacks of grain and tried to take land from others, didn't they? It is also the communists who ushered in the Japs, isn't it?"

The great leader had to spend a lot of time to convince the bigoted Commander Wei of the fighting goal of the real communists.

Commander Wei did not agree to the end that the communists must be regarded as friends but heard with deep admiration and respect the great leader's logical assessment of the military and political situation and his analysis of the tactics of the military action of the Japanese imperialist aggressor army.

Commander Wei, stubborn yet simple, even urged the great leader to come to his unit and work together. This showed how Commander Wei admired his high personality and great intelligence.

With the progress of the negotiations, Commander Wei could not conceal his respect for the great leader's extraordinary sagacity and outstanding insight.

When the great leader talked, Commander Wei kept nodding his sympathy.

The next day, however, an unexpected incident took place and created crisis in the negotiations with Commander Wei.

70-80 Korean youth who had been coming over to Antu from Yanji to take part in the guerrilla rank organized by the respected leader were arrested by the soldiers of Commander Wei's unit.

Commander Wei was going to shoot them to death branding them as stooges of Japanese imperialism.

At the crucial moment when scores of precious young communists faced sudden death, the respected leader had to take resolute measures.

He met the chief of the staff and indignantly protested against the arrest of the Korean youth and the death sentence passed on them as pro-Japanese elements, without first ascertaining what they had done for Japan, if at all, and that this act would be little different from the outrages of the Japanese imperialists who slaughtered innocent people.

The chief of staff could not answer.

The great leader, in company with the chief of the staff, went to Commander Wei and talked in the same vein.

Commander Wei answered: "The Communist Party is pro-Japanese and those youth are Communist Party members so they are all pro-Japanese elements, aren't they? It is natural to punish the pro-Japanese elements."

The great leader smiled at this preposterous statement and said: "It is a fabrication of evil people that the communists are pro-Japanese. Is it right that none other than the commander admits others' words without confirming the correctness of the fact? The fact should be verified."

The chief of staff also supported the words of the great leader and noted that all Communist Party members might not be bad.

At last, Commander Wei agreed to deal with the arrested youth after confirming who they were. He requested the great leader to ask them as they were all Koreans.

Presently the great leader could directly meet them.

They were furious at the Chinese soldiers who had arrested and detained them, and were about to murder them without any reason, and had resolved to make them pay for their blood at the last moment.

When they came to know that the person who had come to meet them was the longed-for respected leader, they all shed tears of emotion and joy.

The respected leader warmly encouraged them and told them that the Chinese soldiers had acted outrageously because they had been deceived by the nation-alienating scheme of Japanese imperialism, so the communists must eschew extremist acts and persuade them patiently for the sake of the fundamental interests of the revolution. He explained:

"What is most precious for us communists? It is the interest of the revolution. For this we must overcome all difficulties and with the lofty virtues of Korean communists and the just stand and attitude of our people fighting against Japanese imperialism, influence and lead the Chinese anti-Japanese soldiers.

"What will happen if we repay in the same coin the harm the Chinese soldiers have done us? It will bring a foolish result—those who should pool their strength against the Japanese imperialist aggressors fight with each

other shedding blood. Then, it will cause great loss to the revolution and only the Japanese imperialists will benefit.

"In order to avenge the many Korean and Chinese people who fell, shedding blood under the bayonets of the cruel Japanese imperialist aggressors and for the victory of the revolution, we must rouse and lead the Chinese soldiers patiently."

After this meeting the great leader immediately met Commander Wei.

Saying that the arrested youth unanimously desired to fight the common enemy, the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung told Commander Wei:

"Now is the time to rally even one man more who intends to fight Japanese imperialism.

"The Korean youth you arrested are those who have come out to fight against Japanese imperialism. The Korean people who have been deprived of their country completely must have greater hatred for Japanese imperialism. How can they all become pro-Japanese elements?"

The great leader repeatedly stressed that it should be the attitude of those who fought for national salvation to unite all the anti-Japanese forces whether Korean or Chinese or Communist, and lead them to fight against Japanese imperialism.

At a loss for words, Commander Wei said that he had no objection if they would fight against the Japanese imperialists, but he worried if they would turn the guns.

With a hearty laughter, the respected leader explained that they would never turn guns and even if they did so, such a large armed unit like Commander Wei's should not fear only scores of men. He said that if these youth were allowed to form a unit separately and fight he would know the fighting spirit and combat capacity of the Korean youth.

Commander Wei vacillated for a long time but finally agreed to release the Korean youth and fully supported the great leader's proposal to form them as a "detachment" of his unit.

The organization of the detachment, according to the far-sighted plan of the great leader, was a tactical measure designed to ensure the open activities of the guerrilla ranks and strengthen relations with the Chinese

nationalist anti-Japanese units to form the joint front with them in the struggle against Japanese imperialism.

Under the conditions where the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units were hostile towards the Korean communists due to their prejudice, the mission of the detachment was to exert influence on them by going into action with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit and influence them by practical example so as to build the bridge for realizing the anti-Japanese united front of the Korean and Chinese people.

Later, the activity of the detachment proved through actual life that this measure taken by the great leader was very correct.

The detachment displayed incomparably greater combat capacity than any Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit, whose soldiers looked at the detachment members with admiration and envy.

On the basis of the experiences of the activities of the first detachment organized in Antu, the respected leader organized the detachment in other district, too, and saw to it that the work with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units was pushed ahead actively.

According to the instruction of the great leader the second detachment headed by Comrade Li Gwang was organized by the revolutionary organization of the Wangqing district.

This was composed of about 40 personnel; they worked with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units in Wangqing and exerted positive influence on the Chinese soldiers.

Voices saying "Let us fight together with the brave Korean comrades!" were raised higher among the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units with every passing day.

The detachment educated the Chinese soldiers with lofty popular virtues of the polite and modest revolutionary army in the relations with the people, too, as well as in military actions.

The hostility of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units towards the Korean communists began to fade away and whenever there was a difficult military action, they proposed joint action to the Korean communists through the detachment.

In order to further intensify the work with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, the great leader set up the Committee of Anti-Japanese Soldiers.

As a result of the organization of this committee which guided in a unified way the work with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units in various forms in all parts including the activities of the detachment, an epochal turn was effected in the work for realizing the anti-Japanese joint front.

Thus, thanks to the extraordinary and energetic activities of the great leader, the biggest difficulty in the work for founding the AJPGA, was overcome, the joint front with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units achieved and a broad path opened for the lawful activities of the Anti-Japanese People's Guerrilla Army.

The great leader energetically pushed the last preparatory work for firing the salvo of the great anti-Japanese war according to the line of the December Mingyuegou Meeting.

The spirit of the members was soaring.

Mother Kang Ban Sok also got up from her sickbed and took part in making uniforms. She said: "Though I am not well, how can I excuse myself from making the uniforms of our army? I would get well on such happy thing" and personally cut cloth and turned the sewing machine.

The uniforms were made of cotton cloth dyed in oak-tree colours; a five-pointed red stitch was stuck on the left breast and the number of the company written there. A red star was pinned on the cap.

While the members of the Women's Association were making uniforms, the armed ranks dispatched from the revolutionary organizations of all regions came to Xiaoshahe one after another in response to the call of the great leader. All of them were youth with rifles or Mausers and hunting guns on their shoulders which had been captured from the enemy.

Members of the Revolutionary Mutual Aid Society were busy in providing their bedding and board.

At last came April 25, 1932, the day which will shine for ever in the history of the glorious anti-Japanese revolutionary struggle of our people.

That day, the lower and upper settlements of Xiaoshahe were bustling from early morning.

The members clad in well-fitting uniforms, rifles on their shoulders, went up the hill of the Tuqidiangou—the venue of the meeting for the founding of the AJPGA.

All the villagers rushed out to see them off.

The sky was clear and cloudless. Really, it was an exhilarating early spring day.

The usual birds' chirpings rang out more clearly as if congratulating the founding of the AJPGA.

Never before had they heard with such a joy the chirpings of mountain birds in the tearful toil of farmhand and servant.

Early in the morning when the bushes were still dewy, the column lined up in the forest of larch trees on the vast flat hill of the Tuqidiangou. The red flag fluttered at the head of the column.

The dazzling morning sunrays shone through the dense forest.

The chests of the members swelled up.

They stood on the very hill they had climbed up and down several times every day with the revolutionary tasks given by the respected leader, but everything was new that day.

"Comrade Commander is coming," someone hastily shouted in a low voice among the ranks. The eyes of the members turned as one to the place he had pointed to.

The great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung, sun of the nation and founder of the Korean People's Revolutionary Army (Anti-Japanese People's Guerrilla Army) came smiling up the hill.

Cheers of "Manse!" burst out from among the ranks. An uninterrupted hurrah echoed against the mountain.

Presently, the signaller blew the bugle declaring the meeting of the founding of the AJPGA.

"Attention! Eyes right!"

Amid the boundless emotion of proclaiming to the whole world the beginning of the anti-Japanese revolutionary war—the culmination of the hatred and indignation of the nation after the arduous trials of the underground activities and the days of bloody struggle for arming and training guerrillas—the ranks saluted the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung, Commander of the AJPGA, with feelings of boundless reverence.

On the broad flat rock the great leader waved his hand to answer their salute and looked round the first dignified contingent of the AJPGA.

In the ranks were those comrades who had fought under the guidance of the great leader since the days of the formation of the DIU, the AIYL

and the YCLK, the members of the Korean Revolutionary Army who had fought forcing their way through the storm and snowstorm in the wilderness of Manchuria and comrades who had been steeled through the Autumn Harvest and Spring Crisis Struggles.

The feeling of boundless emotion was visible in the eyes of the respected leader looking at his reliable men.

The great leader was clad in the same cap and uniform as his men and carried a pistol bequeathed by his father.

The hearts of the men looking up to the great leader in military uniform were overflowing with infinite trust in and reverence for him.

Then, he made a historic speech *On the Occasion of Founding the Anti-Japanese People's Guerrilla Army.*

The speech was a great declaration heralding to the world the historic birth of the AJPGA and a resolute proclamation of war of our people against the Japanese imperialists.

In his speech, the great leader first referred to the historical circumstances of proclaiming the founding of the AJPGA and its urgency and to the successes scored in the arduous struggle for preparing the revolutionary armed force. He also clarified one by one the character and mission and the significance of the founding of the AJPGA, the revolutionary armed force, the first of its kind in thousands-of-year-long history of our people.

He said:

"The AJPGA is made up of the workers, peasants and young patriots who oppose the Japanese imperialists and their stooges and love their country and people; it is a revolutionary armed force which will dedicate itself to protecting the interests of the people.

"The aim and mission of the people's guerrilla army is to overthrow the colonial rule of Japanese imperialism in Korea and bring national independence and social emancipation to the Korean people.

"The foundation of the AJPGA provides us with the motive power which will directly undertake and push forward the armed struggle, the mainstream of the anti-Japanese national-liberation movement in our country, and with the possibility of dealing decisive blows at the Japanese imperialist aggressors and advancing the anti-Japanese national-liberation struggle to a higher stage.

"The foundation of the AJPGA will open up a phase in implementing the line of the anti-Japanese united front and the policy for founding a Marxist-Leninist party by greatly invigorating and encouraging the Korean people who are groaning under the colonial yoke imposed on them by Japanese imperialism and by inspiring them to the anti-Japanese struggle."

The look of the great leader making the historic speech was sublime for all the members.

The great leader had forced his way along the thorny path of many struggles and trials so as to hail the day since he set out on the road of revolution in his early years.

Recalling the unforgettable days, they cherished in their hearts every word of the great leader's speech.

In his historic speech the respected leader posed the militant tasks of waging a full-scale revolutionary war against the Japanese imperialists.

In order to do so it is necessary, first of all, to build up the strength of the AJPGA, its direct instrument, the respected leader noted, and taught that this army must be reinforced so that it becomes a large revolutionary armed force in a short period, all the commanding cadres and soldiers of the guerrilla army should firmly establish the revolutionary world outlook and possess lofty politico-moral virtues as the army of the people, the army of the revolution.

The most urgent problem today is to strengthen the armament and let all the commanding cadres and soldiers master adroit guerrilla tactics, while rapidly expanding the guerrilla ranks, the respected leader said, and gave detailed instructions on the basic requirements and tactical principles of guerrilla warfare.

We should make it a basic principle of guerrilla warfare to wipe out as many enemy troops as possible with minimum losses to ourselves, and we should correctly appraise the situation and the balance of forces between friend and foe and, on this basis, engage the enemy only when we are sure of victory, the respected leader said. He stressed: "While taking the initiative and carrying on active battles, we must properly combine the preservation of the strength of the guerrillas with the destruction of the enemy, correctly grasp the enemy's weak points and use them to advantage."

In the speech he gave a programmatic teaching on the problem of the founding of the guerrilla base, the problem of the anti-Japanese united front with the Chinese people, the problem of cementing kinship with the masses of the people and a number of other important problems arising in waging the armed struggle.

Emphasizing that the guerrilla bases on which the guerrilla army can depend for action must be established so as to launch the guerrilla struggle in real earnest, he taught that the Tuman River area was the best suited for the guerrilla bases in view of the natural and geographical conditions and the composition of the population. The guerrilla bases must be expanded gradually to the area along the Amnok River and deep into the homeland.

The respected leader said that the formation of the united front with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units is a problem of great significance in isolating and weakening the Japanese imperialist forces of aggression and assuring the predominance of the anti-Japanese armed forces and a precondition for forming the anti-Japanese united front with the Chinese people and that it is necessary to conduct perseveringly the work with the Chinese units without letup.

We are fighting the powerful Japanese imperialist aggressors under the arduous conditions without a state-supported rear or aid from outside, and so we have no alternative but to depend on the strength of the organized and united people and wage the guerrilla warfare, relying on their strength, the respected leader taught. He said that the kinship with the masses of the people, and their active support and encouragement are a source of strength of the people's guerrilla army and an important guarantee for the victory and stressed that the people's guerrilla army must thoroughly establish the revolutionary correct viewpoint and attitude towards the masses of the people in the ranks, the discipline of actively protecting the life and property of the people, fight any time and anywhere by relying on the strength of the masses of the people and actively protect the interests of the people. The AJPGA must actively conduct organizational and political work among the masses of the people so that they should support and encourage the AJPGA in every way and vigorously wage the political struggle against Japanese imperialism everywhere in combination with the armed struggle.

The respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung concluded his historic speech as follows:

"Comrades,

"We are the first contingent of the proud Anti-Japanese People's Guerrilla Army to shape the destiny of the country and the people.

"The future of the country and the people depends entirely on how we fight.

"We must carry out our duty to the country and the people with credit surmounting whatever difficulties and obstacles may arise.

"Let us all raise higher the red banner of the revolution and launch a vigorous armed struggle against Japanese imperialism in order to win the historic cause of national liberation."

When the great leader concluded his speech the men raised cheers of "Manse!" as one.

Holding high their rifles, they pledged their struggle and revenge:

"You, our suffering fatherland, your sons and daughters with arms in hands, will never flinch from this road till the liberation, no matter how long and rugged path of struggle may be. On the road of the revolution led by the great General we will fight the enemy at whatever cost to liberate the country without fail...."

Days later on May Day, the militant holiday of the working class the world over, the AJPGA under the personal command of the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung entered the Antu county seat in fine array, fluttering a red flag.

When the resonant bugle call and the thunderous foot stamps shook the county seat all people came out on the street. An old man in his seventies who had to leave his native home due to the cruel treatment of the Japanese imperialists, youngsters and housewives who had been on their way to the field, and children at their books also rushed out. Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese soldiers of Commander Wei's unit also elbowed their way through the crowd.

The people warmly welcomed the guerrillas waving their hands. How eagerly the army of our people had been awaited!

Our people had been forced to the bitter fate of statelessness because they had no powerful national army, they had constantly waged bloody struggle to regain the lost country but saw the history of national

sufferings for a long period, for they had not their own revolutionary armed force. The ardent desire of our people was to have their real revolutionary army strong enough to defeat Japanese imperialism and liberate the country.

With the founding of the AJPGA by the sun of the nation Comrade Kim Il Sung the national desire of our people came true at last.

Really, the founding of the AJPGA was a proclamation of war of the Korean people against the Japanese imperialist aggressors and a historic event in developing the anti-Japanese national-liberation struggle of the Korean people onto a new higher plane.

"The General Star appeared on Mt. Paekdu and trains ten million soldiers."

"The Korean army to defeat Japs came down on Mt. Paekdu on clouds."

As the legends spread endlessly, so at last the mighty soldiers of our people are marching into the county seat in solemn gait.

With tears in their eyes the people raised cheers to their real army, the AJPGA, which had embarked upon the road of an arduous struggle to accomplish the cause of the country's liberation by defeating the Japanese imperialists.

"Where did such manful soldiers come from, from the sky or from underground?"—with a fascinated look the people and the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit soldiers gazed at the column of the AJPGA.

That day, the respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung personally reviewed the column of the AJPGA and made a significant speech.

In his speech he clarified the national task and the international task facing the AJPGA which just made its first vigorous step shouldering the cause of national liberation, stressed the need to cement the militant solidarity of the Korean and Chinese peoples and the anti-Japanese united front and appealed to all to fight stubbornly for the victory of the glorious anti-Japanese armed struggle.

The great leader's speech imbued his men with indomitable fighting will and the conviction of sure victory.

The demonstration on May Day in Antu County organized by the great leader gave our people the joy for having their own genuine revolutionary army and the firm conviction of national liberation and

dealt a heavy political blow to the Japanese imperialist aggressors.

The May Day demonstration also further enhanced the anti-Japanese spirit of the soldiers of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units including the Commander Wei's unit and greatly encouraged them and thus made it possible to consolidate the anti-Japanese united front.

After proclaiming the founding of the AJPGA the great leader dispatched political workers to various localities and energetically led the work for expanding the already formed small armed ranks into big units.

Under his wise leadership the struggle to capture weapons continued vigorously in Yanji, too. Over 50 pieces of weapons including rifles and Mausers were secured and the AJPGA was formed by involving in the small-scale armed rank the hard-core members of paramilitary organization and the members of revolutionary organizations. Later, the armed rank in Yanji region grew to be a battalion-strong force in a short period in the course of incessant battles.

Upholding the teaching of the great leader the AJPGA was also organized in Wangqing region where I (O Baek Ryong) was living; two companies and a detachment were acting there. At that time I was a member of the first company.

In keeping with the line set forth by the great leader the struggle for forming the AJPGA with small-scale armed ranks was waged vigorously in the revolutionary organizations of Hunchun and Helong and as a result, the small armed ranks were all reorganized into the AJPGA until June 1932.

Under the wise leadership of the great leader the AJPGA was organized in all regions in the area along the Tuman River between April and June that year.

Through the active struggle for implementing the line of the anti-Japanese armed struggle and the line of the founding of the AJPGA set forth by the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung, army units were formed in south Manchuria, too, around that time by Comrades Li Hong Gwang and Li Dong Gwang. The Korean communists including Comrades Kim Chaek and Choi Yong Gun who were active in north Manchuria also organized units of the AJPGA in different regions in the period from the summer of 1932 to July next year.

As a result, the units of the AJPGA were formed in almost all places

and started the armed struggle against the Japanese imperialist aggressors by taking advantage of the favourable natural and geographical conditions of the vast area linked with the northern border region of our country.

Some days after the founding of the AJPGA Mother Kang Ban Sok decided to personally visit the guerrillas to see their proud look.

With boundless trust in her son who shouldered the desire of the fellow countrymen and with overflowing pride and joy in her heart the mother made her way to the valley along with two of her younger sons.

At the sight of the mother coming the guerrillas gave cheers and rushed forward.

The mother affectionately looked at her elder son who was coming to her and thinking to herself: "At last I have seen the day!"—she said, "How pleased your father would have been, had he seen our hale and hearty soldiers! Fight well upholding your father's behest."

At the sight of the high mettle of the AJPGA the mother shed warm tears, thinking of her husband Kim Hyong Jik who, breathing his last without attaining his aim for the country's liberation, left two pistols for his son to build Korean army and regain the country without fail.

The guerrillas surrounded her and offered courteous greetings.

Hardly controlling her tears of joy Mother Kang Ban Sok passed her hands over the rifles of the guerrillas, readjusted their uniforms and encouraged them to liberate the country, come what may.

The guerrillas were all those young people familiar to her. They were those who had frequented her house to see her son, those who had stayed for over ten days at her home or left suddenly to go somewhere in snowy deep night, and more than once she had milled grains in the dead of night to provide them with provision for their journey and dried their wet clothes and shoes all night.

Mother Kang Ban Sok ran her affectionate eyes on each of them and said:

"I have nothing to regret now that I see you holding rifles with my own eyes. Because we had no army of our own, how much blood and tears our fellow countrymen have had to shed and what humiliation they have had to suffer. I wish you to fight well. You should bring a bright day to this country. The whole nation believes in you...."

The hearts of the guerrillas were filled with boundless emotion and joy to receive the blessing of deep love and trust from Mother Kang Ban Sok.

The mother devotes her all to the road of revolution for the sake of the fate of the country and the fellow countrymen than her own sake.

Just for that day the mother had traversed endless hill path in snowstorm and gone through all hardships.

Really, Mother Kang Ban Sok was the mother of the revolution. She used to take care of all members visiting the low-eaved straw-thatched house in Xiaoshahe at the dead of night with the love of a real mother. She gave maternal affection to all the guerrillas.

That's why the guerrillas made firm resolve from the bottom of their hearts before the mother:

"Mother! We will defeat the Japanese imperialists who have deprived the 20 million fellow countrymen of their dear native home and cruelly slaughtered our innocent people and return after liberating the country without fail."

(3) LEADING THE FIRST CONTINGENT OF THE AJPGA

The fledgling AJPGA was confronted with many difficult and complex tasks—military and political.

First of all, it ought to establish the guerrilla bases to rely on for operations, and conduct organizational and political activities to steadily expand and strengthen its armed ranks, firmly rally all the anti-Japanese revolutionary forces and thus create a strong internal revolutionary force.

In order to successfully carry out these immediate tasks the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung convened a meeting of AJPGA cadres in Xiaoshahe, Antu County, in mid-May 1932.

It was attended by the political and military cadres of the AJPGA and political workers active in the Tuman River areas.

At the meeting, he reviewed the successes scored in the struggle for the implementation of the lines outlined at the historic December Mingyuegou Meeting and detailed the ways for accomplishing the immediate tasks presented at the founding ceremony of the AJPGA.

The first task he placed before the revolutionary organizations and the armed units in different areas along the Tuman River was to establish guerrilla zones by relying on the revolutionized rural districts and call up the revolutionary masses into the guerrilla zones from the places where the enemy was massacring them.

He also stressed the need to exert revolutionary influence on the units of the Korean Independence Army in south Manchuria to draw them definitely in the anti-Japanese struggle and rally them positively in the anti-Japanese national united front, and thus increase our internal revolutionary forces in every way.

This instruction proceeded from his strategic plan to defeat Japanese imperialism and accomplish the cause of national liberation by our own efforts, by enlisting even the nationalists in the anti-Japanese united front and greatly augmenting our revolutionary forces. It also stemmed from his most generous and lofty intention to afford opportunities for rebirth to the nationalists who were in wilderness.

The "Manchurian Incident" brought severe trials to the Korean Independence Army (KIA) units, a nationalist armed force, which had waged, though passively, an anti-Japanese struggle for the independence of Korea.

In face of the military offensives of the Japanese imperialist troops who had occupied the whole of Manchuria in only a few months, these units lost their areas of activities, dispersed beyond recall and fell into rapid disintegration.

After the September 18 Incident, the KIA units which had been active in different parts of Manchuria disappeared with the exception of the Ryang Se Bong unit in Tonghua. This unit, too, cooped itself up in a limited area in fear of the "punitive operations" of the Japanese imperialists.

The great leader knew Ryang Se Bong very well.

Though infected by nationalist ideas, Ryang Se Bong was patriotic and ready to fight Japanese imperialism. He had made a name among the

participants in the nationalist movement and was versed in military affairs. Yet, he failed to keep the KIA from disintegration and busied himself with the upkeeping of his unit. The destiny of his unit was sealed.

It was evident that like other units of the KIA, isolated in enemy's encirclement, this too would either be wiped out sooner or later by the "mopping-up operations" of the Japanese imperialist aggressors or be disorganized by their intrigues.

The respected leader considered it the bounden duty of real communists not to overlook the unit but assist it properly.

The way for the KIA units to revive lay in establishing contact with the popular masses and striking their root among them.

It was necessary for them to join hands with the communists who were the mouthpiece of the interests of the popular masses and their vanguard, because they thought nothing of the people. To do so was undoubtedly difficult for them because of their prejudices against communism.

Nonetheless, it was essential to convince them that there was no other way out, and to lead them in the anti-Japanese struggle.

After pointing out the need and importance of the work with the Ryang Se Bong unit, the great leader took positive measures at the meeting for advancing the AJPGA to south Manchuria so as to carry out this work successfully.

Another important objective of this advance was to fully demonstrate the strength of the AJPGA in south Manchuria, and thus powerfully push ahead with the formation of the AJPGA unit there, readjust and revive the wrecked revolutionary organizations and positively rouse the broad masses to the anti-Japanese struggle.

His speech at the Xiaoshahe Meeting of Cadres acted as a guideline of important significance in quickly expanding and strengthening the internal revolutionary forces for smashing the intensified counter-revolutionary offensives of the enemy and successfully advancing the armed struggle under the changed circumstances.

After the meeting, the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung sent back the political workers to the Tuman River areas on missions to steadily increase the armed ranks in strength and scope and accelerate the establishment of guerrilla bases. He himself made energetic preparations

for the AJPGA's advance to south Manchuria.

Around the time when the great leader was forming an expeditionary force for its advance to south Manchuria his mother Kang Ban Sok was in a critical condition.

Our hearts ached unbearably, when we, guerrillas, learned that she had been sick in bed when the flames of anti-Japanese war had just begun to flare up, which she had so eagerly wanted to see, while devoting her whole life to the revolution.

The great leader's heart might have ached more.

Yet, he did not utter even a single word about his family, as if forgetting it at all.

One day when preparations were being made for the south Manchurian expedition the guerrillas got some millet for him and asked him to call on his sick mother before setting out on a long journey.

After watching the millet, he tenderly looked round at his men and said that he would visit his mother since he was urged to do so.

He went to his mother's home at Tuqidiangou in Xiaoshahe.

Her illness was more critical than expected, and the family conditions were beyond description. It was hard for him to set out on a long journey, leaving his ailing mother and two younger brothers behind. In deep thought he was lingering about the house, when his mother called out.

Reading what was in her son's mind, she said quietly, yet sternly:

"If a man who is out to restore his lost country worries about his home, how can he achieve a great cause? You are going to build a larger unit to fight, so is it right for you to act like this? It seems to me that what you have done is wrong.... If you want to make a revolution, you should have already forgotten the household cares.... There are your younger brothers, and neighbours are willing to help me. Why don't you leave? You had better go!"

It was a solemn admonition.

She was a really great mother with noble affection.

At her stern reproof he made up his mind to leave the house soon.

When he was going to start out in the morning his mother produced 20 *won* she had carefully kept. He would not receive the money readily, because he knew very well that she had earned it penny by penny sometimes missing her meals though she was ill.

Smiling, she said:

"Take it! A man should keep some money in his pocket for dire needs."

The money was a symbol of her infinite love and ardent wish to be always with her son and look after him in the long future road of revolution.

It was the precious money he spent later in making new clothes for the ill-clad members of the Children's Corps in Maanshan.

He resolutely left home, carrying with him her earnest wishes for his entire dedication to the sacred struggle for the liberation of the country and the freedom and happiness of the people.

Before his advance to south Manchuria, the great leader organized a number of battles in order to obtain necessary war supplies. Especially, the battle fought from ambush on the Antu-Mingyuegou road under his command gave the AJPGA quantities of war material and demonstrated its militancy.

One day in May 1932, information came from an underground organization that an enemy transport convoy had left Mingyuegou for Antu.

Antu district was very hard of access, because it was cut off from the other counties of east Manchuria by the steep Yinge range and had many marshes. The only passage was the Antu-Mingyuegou road. It ran hundreds of *ri* over an uninhabited desert, winding through narrow valleys and marshes. This terrain afforded a favourable condition for surprise attack on the marching enemy.

Planning an ambush on the enemy, the great leader deployed the guerrillas in a place favourable for attack. He ordered them to collect stones on the steep cliff to throw at the enemy.

The guerrillas were excited because they had little combat experience.

Looking round where his men lay in ambush, he taught where to fire, and told them to be calm and resolute.

The respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung said:

"Attack from ambush is a combat form in which you mount a surprise attack on the superior enemy lest he should show his strength fully. Surprise puts a strong enemy on the defensive and prevents him from mobilizing all his combat power and means. Especially after the September 18 Incident, the

enemy has been greatly bluffing, because he had won successive victories over Zhang Xueliang's Chinese Northeastern Army. Therefore, our surprise attack on the enemy will be a thunderbolt from the blue. Let us deal the enemy a decisive blow with composed and resolute action."

In no time the enemy's transport convoy came in sight on the road. At the first appearance it was slackened. When the convoy came within ambush zone, the great leader made a signal to start action.

A volley was fired and stones hurled. The quiet valley was thrown into commotion. It was a real thunderbolt to the enemy.

Under his superb command the guerrillas won a resounding victory.

The war supplies captured in this engagement greatly helped to augment the equipment of the AJPGA and make full preparations for its advance to south Manchuria.

In early June 1932, the great leader left Antu together with a unit under his personal command to advance to south Manchuria. He was with a company-size force, leaving the main force behind for activities in the Tuman River areas.

A detour round the mountains from Antu to Tonghua was nearly 400 km. The distance along the highway was not so long. But in those days the Japanese aggressor troops and the puppet Manchukuo Army and police were stationed on most of the highways, big roads, towns, and the remnants of the Kuomintang Army and local rebels were rife in the hills. In order to avoid meaningless clashes with them it was imperative to go across rugged mountains and thick forests and take a roundabout way in most cases.

The unit which had left Xiaoshahe passed Erdaobaihe and Toudaobaihe via Yujiafenfang, whence it entered on to a rugged mountain pass.

The march was slow in a dense forest of broad-leaved and fir trees.

Fusong was the only big settlement where the ranks stopped over on the way from Xiaoshahe, Antu County, to Tonghua.

Fusong was the township where the great leader had worked long in the days of his early revolutionary activities. It was also the memorable place where Kim Hyong Jik, outstanding leader of our anti-Japanese national-liberation movement, had passed away, leaving his great cause of national liberation unfinished.

Here, the underground revolutionary organizations were active.

Though his itinerary was tight, the great leader stopped over here to meet the underground organizers and give them specific tasks to positively carry out the organizational and political work to fit in with the actual conditions of the switchover to armed struggle.

He also met Zhang Weihua, a Chinese, who grew into a member of the YCLK under his warm loving care.

After the September 18 Incident this Chinese youth had been worried over his losing the organizational line.

At this time, he was called on by the great leader who was leading a stout rank of the AJPGA he had formed. Zhang Weihua was greatly delighted to see him and buried himself in his arms, with tears in his eyes.

The respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung helped him to relink the severed organizational line and specified tasks for him.

The Chinese youth firmly pledged to carry out the revolutionary task proposed by the great leader at the risk of his life, and sent the leader's armed ranks off onto the arduous march, wishing them success.

It was in late June that the contingent reached Tonghua.

The AJPGA marched into the town in fine array, flying a red flag at the head.

Ryang Se Bong was deeply moved by the visit of the great leader, son of Kim Hyong Jik, a prominent leader of our anti-Japanese national-liberation movement, with the AJPGA. He saw that the slogans: "Warm welcome to the AJPGA!", "Down with Japanese imperialism!" and "Long live the independence of Korea!" were hung in different places of the town, and made arrangements for cordial hospitality for the army.

The AJPGA led by the great leader was warmly welcomed by the soldiers of the KIA and people in Tonghua and had an impressive meeting with them.

When he met the great leader, Ryang Se Bong recalled with emotion how Kim Hyong Jik had fought for the national liberation and resuscitation with unbending fortitude and revolutionary ardour, and said with a sigh:

"I am heartily ashamed of my failure to realize the cause of the deceased though I bear it deep in mind."

Deploring that the situation got worse and the independence movement was on the decline and the future looked gloomy, he said painfully: "If our white-clad Korean nation does not pluck courage and revive itself, it will fall back to dust."

He denounced in a towering rage those who were white-livered before the enemy offensives, saying that many "audacious" fellows had come out of these people he had placed firm faith in and that those who had appeared to "command the world" at meetings and been "courageous" in the bickerings among the fellow countrymen disappeared without so much as firing a shot when the Japanese guns boomed.

Ryang Se Bong also voiced his discontent with the communist movement, too.

This revealed his misunderstanding of the change of the times and communist movement as well as the pure patriotism of those who were really concerned about the destiny of the nation.

The great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung paid his respects to the grim resolution of Ryang Se Bong who had been fighting alone with sustained sense of justice under unfavourable conditions of the deterioration of the situation and the declining of the ranks of the KIA, and stressed that the only way out from the difficulties was to unite the strength of the whole nation into a single force and that to do so it was vital to achieve cooperation above all between the participants in the independence movement and the communists.

Since Ryang Se Bong could not tell the real communists from the "Left" opportunists and lumped them together under the term of "leftists", the great leader exerted great efforts to explain the just idea of communism to him.

He also met the soldiers of the KIA. He conversed with them and spoke at their meeting.

His speech at the meeting held in the evening in welcome of the AJPGA deeply impressed the commanders and soldiers of the KIA, because of its lofty patriotism and ardent appeal for great national unity.

After pointing out that the defeat of Japanese imperialism depended on whether or not we formed an anti-Japanese national united front and whether or not we united the strength of the nation into a militant force,

the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung said:

"Some people are now playing with words, talking about communism, nationalism and what not. But it will bring about nothing but split the strength of the 20 million Korean people.

"It is evident to everyone that unity builds up strength and split weakens it. In the past, however, quite a few people buried this truth in oblivion and did not treasure unity. They fought separately, styling themselves as 'heroes', only to sustain bitter setbacks.

"The 20-odd years' history of sanguinary anti-Japanese struggle shows that national liberation cannot be achieved by the strength of a few 'heroes' alone.

"We must not forget this bitter lesson but exert all efforts to rally our 20 million people into a united force.

"The objective of our AJPGA's visit to Tonghua is to tell this intention of ours to you."

His speech evoked vociferous cheers from the KIA soldiers. Many soldiers shed tears of joy.

After joining the KIA to restore the country they had followed their leaders without any good fights only to be discouraged by the declining nationalist movement.

Since they had come out for a great cause, they had reiterated their resolve to keep their principle even if they should die. Yet they lacked assurance to defeat the Japanese imperialist aggressor troops, and their future was gloomy.

Though they had believed only in their leaders and looked up to them, the latter had been at the end of their tether, and some abandoned their constancy and capitulated to the Japanese imperialists.

The KIA soldiers went back, all in deep thought.

Recalling the great leader's impressive speech, they mused on their past and present position, and the future of the KIA. The more they thought the deeper meaning of the speech gnawed at their hearts.

The seed planted in the hearts of the soldiers and young commanders of the KIA sprouted and grew as days went by, and bore fruits in the end.

When the last unit of the KIA faced the danger of ruin, its soldiers who had received an indelible impression from the speech did not lay down their arms but went to the arms of the great leader to join the KPRA.

Choe Yun Gu and other commanders and soldiers of the KIA were enrolled in the KPRA and fought bravely.

Having finished his work with the Ryang Se Bong unit, the great leader went to Liuhe and Mengjiang with his men. The members of the AIYL who had been under his guidance in Jilin were active there. Under the complex and disturbing situation after the September 18 Incident they had been working hard to draw the masses into the anti-Japanese struggle.

The great leader had sympathized with their troubles, and visited them in order to assist them before returning to Antu.

The local organizers were indescribably delighted to see him, and the people became elated, saying: "Now our real army has come."

Staying there, the great leader formed several small groups and sent them to the places where the underground organizations were operating so as to conduct the organizational and political work among the masses and render active help to the underground organizers in their work.

Having learned that the great leader was there with the AJPGA, the local young people asked him in groups or individually to accept them into the army.

While staying in Liuhe and Mengjiang, the AJPGA rapidly expanded its ranks and equipped all the recruits with arms.

When its south Manchurian advance was successfully wound up as scheduled, the AJPGA returned to Liangjiangkou in September 1932, as a politically and militarily augmented force.

The great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung stayed here for about one month.

He acquainted himself fully with the way the AJPGA and the revolutionary organizations had worked in the areas along the Tuman River and the actual conditions there. In September of the same year he called a meeting in Liangjiangkou of commanding officials of the AJPGA and political workers.

The main issue discussed at the meeting was the work with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units.

The work with these units revealed serious deviations.

The great leader had already put forward the line of forming a united front with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units by strengthening the work with them. He himself had conducted negotiations with Commander

Wei and sent out detachments there. In this course, his line had turned correct. However, when the National Salvation Army units had wavered greatly in face of the intensified aggressive offensives of Japanese imperialism, some narrow-minded functionaries and opportunists had complicated the matter.

Overemphasizing the negative aspects of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, they asserted that it was useless to form a united front with those who may possibly surrender and lacked militancy, and went so far as to openly call on the political workers to break with these units.

Under their impact, quite a few officials were diffident of their work with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units.

At the meeting the great leader scathingly criticized the claim to give up working with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units. He stated:

"As you know, after the September 18 Incident many Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units were formed. But in slightly over one year many of them surrendered to the enemy or disappeared. As a matter of fact they did not show militancy to speak of and sustained one setback after another.

"Then, should we give up the anti-Japanese united front with them?

"If they are detached from this front, where should they go? There would have been no way but to capitulate to the enemy and this would have resulted in handing over tens of thousands of armed personnel to the side of counterrevolution. It is as plain as a pikestaff.

"That is why we have made so many efforts to work with these Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, and continue to attach great importance to this work.

"We must view the problem of these units from the angle of the fundamental interests of the revolution and continue to push ahead with this work patiently.

"Since the vacillation and irresoluteness of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units comes chiefly from their fear of the enemy's 'power', it is vital to give them faith in victory. To do so we, communists, must lead them with our militant example."

He also taught specific ways for leading the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units along the road of revolution through joint actions.

While correcting the defects revealed in the work with these units, he applied himself to the solution of many complex questions arising in the general work in the Tuman River areas such as the military actions of the AJPGA, the establishment of guerrilla bases and the organizational and political work of the revolutionary organizations among the masses.

Many days passed since his return to Liangjiangkou. Yet he could not visit his home in Xiaoshahe which was within a hailing distance.

He was deeply worried about his ailing mother who had been seriously ill before his leaving for south Manchuria. But a great revolutionary cause had delayed his visit.

Only after he had decided to move his base of activities to Wangqing he went to Tuqidiangou in Xiaoshahe where his mother was.

Envisioning the unforgettable mother who had come out to the edge of the village to see him off, though she was sick, he hastened his steps, and reached home before dusk.

But the mother was not there. She who would have been more glad than anybody else to see him and who might have awaited her son more eagerly than anyone else had been dead.

It was an unbearable sorrow.

Controlling his rending heart, the respected leader visited the mother's grave with his younger brothers who were sobbing in his arms.

An elm tree stood beside the grave, swaying in the gusts of wind.

He took off his cap and stood at the grave for a long while.

The mother who had borne all hardships, anxiously waiting for the national liberation, who had always looked forward to the victorious future with bright eyes, while following her husband along a long, long arduous path despite her poor health, and who had readily sent her son to the sacred anti-Japanese war and never ceased to miss him—had not allowed the report of her imminent death to reach him, so as not to worry her son who was engaged in a great cause.

Before she died leaving behind her great trust and best wishes for her son's successful liberation of the country, the mother said that her grave should not be moved as long as the enemy remained and Korea did not become independent.

Hearing his mother's warm words with bitter feeling, the respected

leader made a firm resolve to achieve the national liberation cost what it may.

He could not remain long here. After leaving his two younger brothers in the empty house he came back to his unit with a heavy heart.

Several days later when the unit was going to set out for Wangqing, his first younger brother Comrade Kim Chol Ju came to him and requested to be allowed to join the guerrillas.

But he could not satisfy his younger brother's ardent request, because he thought first of the YCLK organization in Antu where his younger brother was working, and worried over his youngest one remaining alone at home.

Holding his younger brother's hand in his, the respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung said:

"Chol Ju, I well understand why you want to follow my unit. However, I think, you had better stay here and do your job.

"If we are to fulfil the desire of our father and mother, we have a lot of work to do. To develop the YCLK organization is no less important than to take up arms now and fight.

"If we are to lead the Korean revolution to victory, it is imperative to firmly build up the YCLK ranks, its reserve force. This will enable us to quickly form the organizational backbone for the founding of a party with a new generation of lively young communists. Only when the ranks of the YCLK are knitted closely, is it possible to create a stronger main force for the Korean revolution.

"The youth are the most vigorous and enterprising force. The progressive youth who are sensitive to new things, revolutionary and aflame with a sense of justice, stand at the head of the revolution and play a role of shock-brigade. Therefore, it is necessary to win over progressive young workers and peasants, and student youth as many as possible to steadily expand and strengthen the YCLK, a contingent of young communists, and rally the broad masses of the youth around it. This can make our revolutionary force an invincible rank.

"In particular, the work of the YCLK is that of fostering the direct reserve force for the armed units; it carries a decisive significance in the strengthening and development of the anti-Japanese armed struggle.

"In order to augment the AJPGA, the main force of the armed struggle,

and expand and develop it, it is essential, above all, to accept good young people into the YCLK and train them to be the reserve force of the guerrilla army. You must remember this importance of the YCLK work."

These were an earnest advice which treasured the revolutionary principle most as well as an unbounded affection for his younger brothers.

Comrade Kim Chol Ju assured that he would do as told, but could not quite conceal his grief.

The great leader was distressed at the parting with his crestfallen brother. So he took his brother to a tavern, where he asked for two glasses of wine and cold bean curd, and sat face to face with his younger brother.

His heart unbearably ached, for he had to part with his two forlorn younger brothers with their parents dead, in the rough alien land, and there was little he could promise.

Just for the sake of the revolution he endured the untold sufferings and sorrow with his entire devotion and inflexible will to dedicate his family and himself to the revolution, and set out for a new area.

This was the last meeting between the brothers, they never saw each other again. Comrade Kim Chol Ju never again met his dear elder brother standing at the head of the anti-Japanese war, and died a hero's death in a battle with the enemy in June 1935.

In order to further strengthen the work with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units and exert revolutionary influence on the people in vast areas, the great leader left Liangjiangkou for Wangqing via Dunhua, Emu and Nanhutou.

The march to north Manchuria was more arduous than that to south Manchuria.

The enemy intensified his desperate offensive, throwing in reinforcements, and the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units more blatantly revealed their vacillation and disintegration, giving rise to many capitulators and local rebels.

The winter of north Manchuria was rigorous.

The unit fought its way through many skirmishes and restored order in the disintegrating Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units. Along this long, arduous march there were many sacrifices and quite a few guerrillas were sent to the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units. By the time the

unit arrived in the neighbourhood of Mt. Laohei the ranks shrank to only 18 men.

Here the unit was caught in an enemy encirclement. The unit was too small to break through the encirclement, and the way further ahead was blocked by waist-deep snow. The guerrillas were at a loss what to do.

After studying the enemy's movements in a composed manner, the respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung said to his men:

"It seems we are in enemy encirclement. The enemy, however, is unable to encircle this vast thick forest of Mt. Laohei. Needless to say, it is very difficult for us to force our way because we are unfamiliar with this place. Yet when we stick to the fundamental communist stand of relying firmly on the people during difficulties we will be fully able to overcome these difficulties."

He led the unit deeper into the forest. There was a snow-covered log hut in a gorge. Its owner was a grey-haired old man surnamed Ma who warmly welcomed them when they were identified as guerrillas.

The guerrillas were utterly exhausted, and when they were invited into the room they lay down on the floor.

The enemy was at the heels and stood on guard at the road ahead. Enemy aircraft were flying low overhead, scattering handbills calling for submission.

The troops of the local Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit had fled or capitulated, and rough fellows were perpetrating brigandage in the mountains.

The old man who had settled here in the mountain, turning his back on the outer world, went out. Soon he returned in a flurry and said that the remnants of Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit in the next-door house were plotting to disarm the 18 guerrillas.

Outside, it was dark with a blizzard raging in full fury. The exhausted guerrillas were laying still. When they were members of the YCLK, they had been ambitious and elated, but now they were helpless in face of formidable ordeals.

(What is to be done? The unit is small, not steeled....) — the great leader had a thousand emotions on his mind as he sat before the oven, gazing at the fire.

It was the night of December 31, 1932. The first arduous march the AJPGA was making in a little over half a year after its birth was

undergoing another most severe ordeal.

The old master who had been watching the great leader lost in deep thought asked him if he was the "commander".

When the great leader nodded in agreement, the old man brought him a hare he had caught and told him to roast it for food and satisfy their appetite. Then he offered to take the guerrillas to a safe place where they could rest and recoup for another fight with the Japs.

Old man Ma cooked bun soup for the guerrillas and took them about 20 kilometres further into the forest. There was a hut with a small room wide enough to spread only one rush mat and barn shed. Several hares and a roe deer the old man had caught were hung and there was wheat, corn, bean and other cereals and a hand-grinder. There were also many books he had read.

Suggesting that if the room was narrow straw be spread on the kitchen for sleeping, the old man told the guerrillas to use all articles and goods here as they wish.

He said: "I'm too old to take up arms like you, young men. But I won't be a stooge. Please set your mind at rest...."

The old man went back, promising that he would tell them what was going on outside and show the way for them when they wanted to depart.

After sending off Old Ma, the respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung spoke to his men who were moved by the old man's favour:

"How warm our people's kindness is! It is a token of their great and ardent expectations of us, anti-Japanese people's guerrillas. What a shame it would be if we who fight for those expectations and aspirations of the people vacillate even for a second in face of these trials and difficulties! We must not forget for even a moment that our 20 million people are looking forward to us with the same kindness and wishes as Old Ma's."

He continued: The revolution is by its nature the course of overcoming hardships one after another. We must surmount these obstacles to liberate our country and build a new society. Our hopes, our youth and our wisdoms exist for the revolution. Think of the homeless people. Think of the enemy trampling underfoot our fellow countrymen. Can we stand this? Let us be resolute and fight. The people are waiting for us.

His impassionate words caused a great stir and strong wave of

revolution in the hearts of his men.

They were all good comrades who had been fighting since the initial period of revolutionary activities. In the days of underground activities, they had considered themselves "heroes", and "gallant men". Now they renewed their determination, repenting of their weakness before the temporary severe trials.

In this uninhabited mountain the guerrillas conducted military and political studies, while strictly guarding against the enemy's moves.

Having withstood the trials and refreshing themselves the guerrillas left the log hut. Old Ma showed the way for them.

The guerrillas who had grown stronger amid trials got into Wangqing County, blowing the bugle and flying a red banner with the great leader at the head.

To south Manchuria, and then to north Manchuria.

The fledgling AJPGA under his command made its first long march and grew into a steel-like rank on this path of ordeals.

3. THE ESTABLISHMENT OF GUERRILLA ZONES

(1) THE STRONGHOLD OF REVOLUTION

The great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung returned from his advance to south Manchuria in the autumn of 1932 with his fledgling AJPGA, and made greater efforts to establish guerrilla zones over the extensive areas along the Tuman River.

Putting forward the line of establishing guerrilla zones at the December Mingyuegou Meeting, the respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung taught as follows:

"Our present conditions demand the establishment of guerrilla zones—bases in the form of liberated areas. Only when guerrilla zones, completely beyond the enemy's ruling system, are set up, will it be possible to protect the young revolutionary armed forces and the revolutionary masses and make successful military and political preparations which will enable us to develop the anti-Japanese national-liberation struggle as a whole, concentrating on armed struggle."

He also instructed:

"...We must set up guerrilla zones—guerrilla bases in the form of liberated areas—right in the mountainous and the revolutionized rural areas along the Tuman River."

In accordance with these teachings, a powerful struggle was waged to set up guerrilla bases in the form of liberated areas along the Tuman River, and guerrilla zones were in the making in Wangqing, Yanji, Helong, Hunchun and Antu.

In the extensive areas along the Tuman River the composition of the population was good, geographical and topographical conditions were advantageous for guerrilla warfare and there was a certain trained armed force. These conditions made it possible to turn these areas into guerrilla

zones, guerrilla bases in the form of liberated areas.

After the December Mingyuegou Meeting, 1931, the revolutionary organization districts along the Tuman River started building guerrilla zones, while sending out many leading elements to the countryside for revolutionizing it.

As the respected leader had instructed, to revolutionize the broad rural areas is the work in the initial stage for the establishment of guerrilla zones.

The revolutionized rural area served, on one hand, as the provisional centre from which the guerrilla army could conduct its operations until the guerrilla zones were established and, on the other, it constituted a firm basis for establishing them. Moreover, in the course of revolutionizing the countryside, valuable experience would be gained for founding such zones.

To revolutionize the countryside and make it a guerrilla zone was a very difficult and arduous undertaking entailing fierce battles with the enemy. Under the strict enemy watch, the rural population had to be educated perseveringly and drawn into the revolutionary organizations, and the enemy-controlled ruling machinery be disrupted.

Busy as he was organizing and directing the work of founding the AJPGA and expanding and strengthening it, the great leader energetically progressed with the establishment of revolutionary bases—guerrilla zones.

In May of the year before his advance to south Manchuria, he had called a meeting of cadres in Xiaoshahe in which he had given valuable instructions again on the building of guerrilla zones.

Assigning the revolutionary organizations and armed units in the Tuman River areas the task of building guerrilla zones in the favourable revolutionized rural areas and moving the revolutionary masses into those zones from the places where the enemy was perpetrating brutal murder, he reiterated that to establish guerrilla zones was a pressing task which brooked no further delay.

Setting up these zones was a struggle for protecting the revolutionary masses to safeguard the internal forces of our revolution and a worthy work for laying a basis for armed struggle to effect upsurge in the anti-Japanese war.

After reiterating the significance of this work, he specified where and in what form and scale guerrilla zones were to be established.

In hearty response to his programmatic teachings the Party and YCLK organizations in different revolutionary organization districts continually forged ahead with the revolutionization of rural areas and, at the same time, began to form the guerrilla zones as conditions matured.

At that time I (Rim Chun Chu) was active in Fuyandong in Baqu, Yanji County.

The Shirengou-Fuyandong district was close to Badaogou, one of the enemy's bases for "mopping-up operations". Yet, it was inhabited by good people, covered with steep mountains, and its economic foundations were comparatively good in Yanji County.

After settling in this district we, in contact with the revolutionary organizations, awakened the village people and, at the same time, recruited those tested in the Autumn Harvest Struggle and Spring Crisis Struggle in the Peasants' Association, the AIL and the RMAS and gave them revolutionary training. In course of this many core elements were formed. The fine people who had been steeled in the life within the mass organizations were drawn into the YCLK, an organization of young vanguard, and the Party ranks expanded with fine YCLK members.

The rural villages in this district underwent a radical change in a short time; the basic Party and YCLK organizations grew in scope and strength, and the people, young and old, were all enlisted in the organizations—old people in the RMAS and children in the Children's Corps.

The villages were revolutionized and placed under our control gradually, free from the enemy rule.

Overawed by the revolutionary spirit of the people, the renegades to the revolution, cowards, enemy stooges and the rich packed up and slipped away, leaving their paddies unharvested. Their houses and crops remained untouched.

The revolutionaries who had got exposed in the course of their underground activities in the enemy-held areas, the people groaning in the sea of blood and the children whose parents had been killed by the enemy were all moved to the villages in the Shirengou-Fuyandong district.

The village population increased considerably. The immigrants had nothing to start with, for their houses had been burned down and their

household utensils plundered by the enemy.

In close cooperation with the revolutionary organizations in the villages we gave shelter and food to the people from the enemy-controlled areas, and made them lead a normal life within new organizations under guarantee of their former organizations.

The great leader's policy of establishing guerrilla zones was being put into successful effect not only in Shirengou-Fuyandong district but also in Wengqu and Laoqu, Yanji County; villages in Yilangou; in Yulangcun, Helong County; Gayahe, Xiaowangqing, Dawangqing and Yaoyinggou, Wangqing County; and other vast areas including Antu and Hunchun along the Tuman River.

Scared at this, the enemy got on the rampage. He left no stone unturned to obstruct the establishment of guerrilla zones in naturally fortified places fearing that the zones would soon choke his windpipe.

The enemy infiltrated many spies into farming villages and drove large "punitive forces" to what they called the "scorched earth" operations.

In May 1932 in Yilangou, Yanji County, the Japanese aggressor army perpetrated the brutal act of arresting and butchering more than 1,000 patriotic people attending the May Day celebrations in and around Sanhanli, Hunchun County upwards of 1,600 farm houses were burned down. The arson and murder were intended to break the revolutionary spirit of our people and thwart the building of guerrilla zones.

The great leader's measures to counter the enemy offensives were to expand and strengthen the paramilitary organizations for the protection of people in the revolutionized areas, and to fight many engagements to hit the enemy and create favourable conditions for the establishment of guerrilla zones.

On his order, skirmishes took place in Badaogou and other places in Yanji district in the summer of the same year.

Badaogou was an enemy base for "punitive operations" which lay wedge-wise among the mountain villages such as Shirengou, Fuyandong, Zhangcaicun, Sandaowan and Weizigou which were being converted into guerrilla zones. Therefore, unless the enemy there was crushed, it was impossible to set up guerrilla zones smoothly in the surrounding areas.

The guerrillas reconnoitred the enemy several times, and just before

the attack they cut down all the telephone lines to Badaogou and posted interceptors on all roads.

After these thoroughgoing preparations, they raided Badaogou by surprise. The enemy got isolated and was wiped out.

Skirmishes took place everywhere to hold the enemy in check: The guerrilla unit in Wangqing district wiped out many enemy forces on the march on the pass between Hamatang and Malugou, and the guerrillas in Hunchun district boldly surprised the walled town of Hunchun when the main forces of the Japanese garrison had been out on "punitive operations", thereby dealing them a staggering blow.

The guerrilla forces in Helong district struck terror into the enemy's heart through assault on Chuankou opposite to Hoeryong, Korea, and other positive military actions.

The enemy bewailed that the AJPGA went into action 984 times that year against him.

Shaken with fright, the enemy moved along the highways, not daring to appear in the countryside not only individually but also in small groups.

Thus favourable conditions were created to establish guerrilla zones in the mountain areas along the Tuman River. This enabled the revolutionary organizations and leading cadres in these areas to hasten the building of guerrilla zones.

The revolutionary organizations started to exercise jurisdiction in many of the places where the composition of the population was favourable and which were geographically and topographically advantageous.

From the spring of 1932 Xiaowangqing, Gayahe and Yaoyinggou guerrilla zones began to appear in Wangqing district.

Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone was established in the form of liberated area around Xiaowangqing and Dawangqing valley. It consisted of high and low mountains, 600-1,000 metres above the sea, deep valleys, steep slopes, gorges, cliffs and dense forests, forming a natural fortress difficult for the enemy to attack and easy for guerrillas to defend. This zone occupied Xiaowangqing valley including Macun and Donglincun; Dawangqing valley embracing Xidapo, Setjjaesom, Manhe, Shiliping and Taipingcun, and vast Dakanzi area.

The Gayahe guerrilla zone comprised of Yongchangdong,

Sishuiping, Sitong and Gayahe, and the Yaoyinggou guerrilla zone took up the farming areas along the Xiaotonggou River flowing from Laoling to Daxinggou.

In Yanji district there were formed Wangougou, Hailangou, Shirengou, Sandaowan and Weizigou guerrilla zones.

Zhangcaicun, Fuyandong and Shirengou belonged to the Shirengou guerrilla zone which embraced mountain hamlets extending from the Yanji River 8 kilometres off the north of Yanji to Yanjihe.

The Yulangcun and Niufudong guerrilla zones appeared in the Helong district, and Yantonglazi, Lishugou and Dahuanggou guerrilla zones in Hunchun district.

Some deviations were revealed in the establishment of guerrilla zones. They were manifested in the attempts to turn all the revolutionized rural areas into guerrilla zones in the form of liberated areas, blinded by the surging revolutionary spirit of the masses and the rapid development of the armed struggle or to alienate those who favoured revolution, on account of their property and social career under the ultra-"Leftist" slogans.

These deviations caused no small obstructions and confusion in the work for setting up guerrilla zones.

Some defects contradictory to the respected leader's plan were found out in defining the forms of guerrilla zones.

Having returned to Liangjiangkou from the south Manchurian advance, he paid deep attention to correcting these defects.

Describing it as a reckless act ignoring the real conditions of inadequate armed forces to convert all the revolutionized rural areas into guerrilla zones—liberated areas, he pointed out: it will result in dispersing the armed forces to set up unwarrantedly many guerrilla zones in the form of liberated areas and divide the AJPGA to defend them. In the final analysis, it is a most dangerous deviation making it impossible to guarantee the effective defence of any guerrilla zones.

The respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung warned against any attempts to set up guerrilla zones in the form of liberated areas willy-nilly when conditions were yet to ripen, and called for setting up semi-guerrilla zones where the enemy's ruling institutions were allowed only in name, but in actuality our revolutionary organizations lorded it over.

He said:

"Since the revolutionary organizations grasped the masses, if they work in a flexible manner, they will be able to carry out their tasks properly, whether there are the enemy's ruling agencies or not. If our organizers are planted in the enemy's bodies, they will come to operate more favourably, and won't suffer any damages because they are always familiar with the inside of the enemy.

"In reality, such areas are as good as under our jurisdiction even when the guerrillas are not stationed."

His prudent teachings served as a guideline for quickly correcting the deviations and establishing and consolidating the guerrilla zones.

In the Helong district where I (Pak Yong Sun) was then, quite a few comrades made wrong claims devoid of a correct understanding of the form of guerrilla zones, which gave rise to confusion.

At first we considered Niuxinshan district adequate for a guerrilla zone.

Located southeast of the Paekdu range, Mt. Niuxin looked like the heart of a cow with 11 valleys where 700-800 Korean farm houses straggled. Most of the dwellers were revolutionary masses enlisted in the Peasants' Association, the AIL and the RMAS. As it was adjacent to Musan area flanking the Tuman River, this area was conveniently placed for advance into our homeland. In the northwest there was Chechangzi, Antu County across a pass. In the light of both geographical location and the composition of the population, this area was unquestionably advantageous for the establishment of a guerrilla zone.

But our survey in this area showed that the enemy was building big barracks there evidently to draw in large armed forces.

Hot debate on this matter took place in the organization. Some comrades held that the enemy be fought back to set up a guerrilla zone and others advised dejectedly to give up this area.

In Helong there were no armed forces strong enough to fight a large enemy army. Yet, it was loath to abandon the Niuxinshan district, because of its terrain and masses.

The judicious teaching of the respected leader opened our eyes. It brought us to realize that the Niuxinshan area was excellent as a semi-guerrilla zone.

While the enemy was building barracks, we carried out energetic organizational and political work in the 11 valleys of Niuxinshan.

As a result, though many enemy troops were stationed in these valleys, our people held the posts of *jia* (tithing) head and district head, and the Party, YCLK and other revolutionary bodies such as the Children's Vanguard, the Women's Association and the Children's Corps started operating there.

The enemy set up the "residents' society" there. But it could not work, just with its signboard hanging down. The masters there were not the enemy but we. The Niuxinshan district was, after all, under our control.

The wise leadership of the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung helped correct deviations in the work for the establishment of guerrilla zones.

The guerrilla zone was being fortified as a strategic centre for the Korean revolution, as a bulwark for the revolution. It also enabled the AJPGA to grow stronger quickly.

(2) THE WANGJAESAN MEETING

Since he started preparing for the anti-Japanese armed struggle, the great revolutionary leader Comrade Kim Il Sung had conceived a farsighted plan to revolutionize the northern border area flanking the Tuman River and convert it into a strategic base for the Korean revolution.

He taught:

"If we use to our advantage the nature and terrain of Korea's border and the wide expanse of Manchuria, we can win a final victory, weakening and smashing the enemy forces progressively even with small forces."

He added:

"Onsong and other northern border area are adequate both geographically and topographically for a strategic base for our revolution.

"If we are to advance our guerrilla operations deep into the homeland in future, we must control this area, as it not only immediately adjoins the

mountainous areas of Jiandao where a guerrilla zone will be formed in future, but the Hamgyong range also starts there."

The northern border area including Onsong was most advantageous for the formation of the base for the Korean revolution.

Onsong, Hoeryong, Chongsong and three other townships in northern Korea were contiguous to the guerrilla zone on the opposite bank of the Tuman River and favourably placed for expanding the armed struggle from Mt. Wangjae deep into the Korean interior over the Hamgyong range.

The class composition of the population was also favourable.

Especially in Onsong area there had been laid the basis for organizational and political work among the masses by the revolutionary cadres the respected leader had educated and trained when he was in Jilin.

At that time, he sent Comrade Kim Jun and other members of the AIYL from Longjing area to Onsong and Chongsong, so as to give the local people revolutionary enlightenment and awakening and rally them in revolutionary organizations.

He invited the representatives of the revolutionary organizations and political workers from the homeland to important meetings to give them specific instructions and dispatched additional political workers to Onsong, Hoeryong, Musan, Kyongwon and other border areas along the Tuman River.

Particularly after the establishment of guerrilla zones along the river, more political workers were sent out to expand the revolutionary organizations in almost all Onsong areas.

The political workers drew steadfast workers and peasants into the Worker-Peasant Union and other underground revolutionary organizations, and gave revolutionary training to the masses through legal bodies such as evening schools, sworn brotherhood and a temperance society.

In response to the respected leader's line of anti-Japanese armed struggle, the awakened workers, peasants and patriotic young intellectuals came out in a sacred struggle for national liberation.

On the basis of the shining successes registered in the expansion and development of the anti-Japanese armed struggle in nearly one year following the founding of the AJPGA, the great leader Comrade

Kim Il Sung planned to move into the homeland in order to materialize his strategic scheme for the expansion of armed struggle there.

Before his homeward advance, he ordered the AJPGA to intensify military and political activities in the Tuman River areas.

His intention was to contain and hamstring the enemy in these areas and, thus, not only create favourable military circumstances for advance into the homeland but also carry out brisk political work among the local people to lay advantageous mass foundations for the operations of armed units.

In accordance with his operation plan and order, one night in February 1933 a guerrilla unit raided the customhouse in Hagu-dong far away from the east of Onsong district which he had designated as the destination of the homeward advance, and then stormed an observation post on Ryongdang Ferry, Kyongwon County. One night not long afterwards, another unit áttacked the office of Undu Sub-county, Hoeryong County, which was away to the west of Onsong, and dealt the enemy a big blow.

After throwing the enemy into disorder, the respected leader organized a unit for advance into Onsong district. The unit consisted of more than 50 selected political workers, officers and rank-and-file soldiers from the five companies of the AJPGA stationed in the Wangqing guerrilla zone. I (O Baek Ryong) was greatly honoured to be in this unit under his personal command.

We all changed into new uniforms and fully prepared ourselves for action.

Under his personal command our unit started homewards amid warm send-off of the Macun people.

It was March. But mountains and valleys were still covered with snow and the weather here was as cold as in winter in north Jiandao flanking the Tuman River. Yet, we quickened our steps in high spirits.

After crossing the back hill in Sitong and a stream, we marched southwards and again crossed several hills into Solgol between Wangqing and Hunchun Counties where we saw the Tuman River flowing down afar along the northern Korean border.

I had crossed and recrossed the river frequently. Yet I was moved

with emotion, as I was going to get across again with the glorious AJPGA unit under his command.

It seemed it was only yesterday that I had gone across the river with tears in my eyes!

A wide river was flowing by the small plain at the entrance to Solgol, and a mountain stretching down from the main peak of Mt. Wangjae in Korea stood on the opposite bank.

The Tuman River was still frozen over.

Several farmhouses were found here and there in Solgol. In this valley with the Korean territory near at hand, the great leader ordered his unit to make camp. The guerrillas were quartered at the houses.

As told by the great leader on the eve of our march, we helped the masters with household chores—chopping wood, sweeping yards and fetching water from the river.

We stayed here for some days. Company political instructors and other comrades went out to conduct the political work among the masses at Liangshuiquanzi some four kilometres off, and other nearby villages.

The respected leader made final preparations for advance into the homeland.

On his instructions some comrades went across the frozen river into Onsong on missions to find out the enemy's movement and assemble the political workers who had been dispatched there and the chiefs of the underground revolutionary organizations into Mt. Wangjae.

Till they came back, we conducted our studies, learning how to write notes and taking a course in shooting, decoying, ambush, raids and other tactics.

The respected leader spared his precious time to guide our training.

One early morning when I was chopping firewood for the house where I was quartered I happened to see some guards of the great leader hurry off to the Tuman River with a long staff with a hook tied to its end. When I finished chopping, I went out to the river. To my surprise the respected leader was searching with the long staff the river bed through a hole in the thick ice.

This was what had happened:

The respected leader had always told his men to work among the

masses properly and he himself had set a fine example.

Quartered at a house, though busy with the imminent advance into the homeland, he made it a point to chop firewood and clean up the yard.

Early in the morning, despite the protests of his men and the old master, he would go to the river to fetch water. That morning, too, he had gone out to the river. It was chilly and he had to break the thick ice. But while he was breaking the ice with an axe its handle broke and the head slipped into the water hole.

We tried to find it out in the river bed by turns, but in vain. A guerrilla suggested paying the owner for his loss.

But the respected leader went on with the search despite the morning frost, saying seriously that however much they paid, it would not compensate the owner for the loss of a tool he was used to.

When finally the search was useless, he could not but offer the owner money for the axe.

But the old man did not accept it, saying: "I've put you to so much trouble for a mere axe. How can I possibly accept this money?"

The old man kept on refusing, but finally the leader forced him to accept it, and apologized.

An axe—it was by no means a great thing. Yet, the great leader had apologized to the owner for the loss of his finger marked tool. His lofty character made us, guerrillas, treasure more highly the unity between the army and people and deepened our feelings of infinite respect for him.

The comrades came back from the homeland after carrying out his directives successfully. There was no change in the enemy movement.

On the early morning of March 11 the respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung got together the commanding officers and issued a combat order on the advance.

We went into action right then. Some guerrillas were sent to cut off the road to Liangshuiquanzi and Hunchun and guard the plain in front of Mt. Wangjae and the back path, another group went across the Tuman River with the respected leader and reached the foot of the mountain.

Human traffic was little, the mountain's main peak overlooking the river was steep, whereas its opposite side facing Solgol consisted of a gorge called Tamakgol.

We went up along a snow-covered path in the narrow gorge until we reached a flat area atop Mt. Wangjae.

Overgrown with pine and larch trees the mountain consisted of five peaks and Wangjae meant the highest peak.

Here the respected leader redivided his men into groups and sent them to different places. Some comrades left to guard the back of the mountain and the front waist leading to Onsong, and some others to scout the enemy's movement in Changdok-dong and Onsong. Still others were sent to the foot of the mountain to take over military supplies from the organizers at home.

He himself went up the highest peak with some guerrillas and military and political workers. When they found themselves in an opening where a small oak tree stood, many people came out running from the wood. They were political workers and the chiefs of underground revolutionary organizations at home; some comrades had been away from the respected leader, engaging in arduous activities in the enemy-controlled areas for 4-5 years; some others were chiefs of the underground revolutionary organizations who were to meet him for the first time; and still others had already received his teachings at the historic Mingyuegou Meeting. Their faces wore an air of infinite joy and emotion over their meeting the longed-for great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung in the homeland.

"Dear General!..."

A political worker who had been dispatched right at the beginning of the revolutionary struggle shouted in a choked voice and bowed courteously.

Tightly embracing this dear soldier who had become emaciated, yet hardened by difficulties in the enemy-held areas, he said excitedly:

"You have suffered a great deal. You have done many things."

Hearing his hoarse voice the soldier sobbed as he buried himself in his arms.

Each of the chiefs of the underground revolutionary organizations was introduced. With tears of emotion and joy in their eyes, they made a deep bow to the great sun of the nation Comrade Kim Il Sung.

How ardently they had adored and longed to see him. Even under the enemy's sharp bayonets, they had always looked up to the great leader and

fought stubbornly, looking forward to the day when he would bring about the spring of national liberation in this downtrodden land.

Their hearts beat uncontrollably as they hoped to get valuable advice from the great leader in the homeland itself.

The great leader looked round with an affectionate air and warmly took their hands.

Then, he was informed by political workers from the homeland and chiefs of revolutionary organizations of the internal situation and their activities and he praised them on their successes.

After a while, he called a meeting of chiefs of the underground revolutionary organizations and political workers in the Onsong area.

At the meeting, the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung made a historic speech *To Spread and Develop the Armed Struggle into the Homeland.*

To begin with, the great leader made an all-round analysis of the obtaining situation, the successes scored in the year following the start of the anti-Japanese armed struggle and the desperate manoeuvres of Japanese imperialism, and explained the strategic and tactical line on spreading and developing the armed struggle into the homeland and bringing about a great upsurge in the Korean revolution as a whole.

The respected leader said:

"This situation urgently demands that we frustrate the frantic moves of Japanese imperialism and expand and develop the anti-Japanese armed struggle, holding the red banner of revolution higher still. In this connection, the guerrillas' advance into the homeland is of great significance. By marching into the homeland we guerrillas can consolidate the achievements already won and aim irreparable political and military blows at the Japanese imperialists who have occupied our beautiful country and are forcing all sorts of misfortune on our people; we will enable the anti-Japanese armed struggle to exert a strong revolutionary influence on the people in the homeland and rouse them vigorously to a sacred war against Japan, thus finally liquidating the bulwark of colonial rule by Japanese imperialism.

"Therefore, we must expand and develop our anti-Japanese armed struggle to the homeland, however vicious the enemy's moves, however difficult the situation."

Continuously, he dwelt upon the tasks for raising to a higher stage the

armed struggle in the homeland.

He emphasized that to establish and consolidate the semi-guerrilla zones in vast areas of the homeland adjacent to the guerrilla zone along the Tuman River is of very great significance in setting up political and military bases for further extending the armed struggle to the homeland and building supply bases.

Then he underscored the need to establish and consolidate the semi-guerrilla zones in various regions of the homeland including the Onsong area, with the good class basis of the people, prepared force and favourable natural and geographical conditions.

Further, in order to form the semi-guerrilla zones in vast areas of the homeland, not only the AJPGA must conduct more positive combat activities in the border area along the Tuman River, but also the underground revolutionary organizations in the homeland rally the broad masses against Japanese imperialism, wage the struggle for revolutionizing them energetically and build secret liaison points and various bases for activity by taking advantage of the favourable natural conditions in the forest regions.

He continued:

"In order to expand and develop the armed struggle into the homeland and win the historical cause of national liberation, we must firmly unite all sections of the masses with anti-Japanese inclinations under the banner of the anti-Japanese national united front based on the worker-peasant alliance. This is a very correct step in the light of the character of our revolution designed mainly for national liberation against Japan or the actual situation in which the reactionary offensive of Japanese imperialism against the Korean people is being intensified more than ever before. In fact, only when we unite the broad sections of the anti-Japanese forces and fight relying on them, can we isolate and weaken the counterrevolutionary forces, completely smash the reactionary offensive of the Japanese imperialists and achieve the historical cause of liberating the country."

In order to rally the whole nation into one political force, first of all, it is important to form mass organizations of various forms suitable to the specific features of each region and local area, enlist broad masses in them and educate them in a revolutionary way, the great leader said and dwelt upon the content, form and method of education.

Then, he set forth the line on closely blending the mass movement with the preparation for stepping up the armed struggle in the homeland.

He added:

"The mass struggle is very important in dealing blows to the colonial rule of Japanese imperialism, tempering the masses revolutionally and creating favourable conditions for expanding and developing the armed struggle. However, this alone is not enough to overthrow the system of the colonial rule of the Japanese imperialist marauders and win the historical cause of the country's liberation.

"That is why we raise it as an important matter to link the mass struggle with the work of expanding and developing the anti-Japanese armed struggle into the homeland."

He emphasized that the underground revolutionary organizations and political workers must actively organize and wage various forms of anti-Japanese mass struggles in combination with the anti-Japanese armed struggle, and thus give a decisive blow to the Japanese imperialists, expand and strengthen the mass foundation of the revolution and precipitate the ruin of Japanese imperialism.

He went on to say that the revolutionaries and people in the homeland must inform the AJPGA in time of the enemy's movements, render more active material support to encourage the guerrillas and the people in guerrilla zones and make an active contribution to the development of the anti-Japanese armed struggle.

In conclusion, he taught that the preparations for the founding of the Party must be made vigorously, and said:

"We must mobilize the efforts of the whole nation and wage a long and bloody struggle to crush the brigandish Japanese imperialists in order to achieve the historic cause of the country's liberation. If we are to be successful in this difficult and complicated revolutionary task, we must have a General Staff of the revolution. That is why the founding of a Marxist-Leninist party is the most urgent and important task for us communists."

In order to found the Party, it is imperative to build and expand the ranks of the communists, armed with the revolutionary theory of the working class and seasoned and trained through practical struggle, the great leader pointed out and taught that no room must be left for any factional and hostile ideas to get a footing in the revolutionary organiza-

tions, and the struggle be waged energetically to rear the core elements through the revolutionary organizations.

The historic speech of the great leader who unfurled a grand strategic plan on broadening and developing the armed struggle into the homeland deeply impressed the political workers and chiefs of the underground revolutionary organizations who had attended the meeting.

In this speech they found the path of struggle, foresaw the future of the liberated country and cherished in mind the immense pride and self-confidence in standing together in the glorious rank of the anti-Japanese revolutionary war.

The respected leader taught one by one chiefs of the underground revolutionary organizations and political workers in Onsong region, who were elated with excitement, what problems might arise in the course of implementing the line of the meeting.

The political workers and chiefs of the underground revolutionary organizations were overwhelmed with the boundless reverence for the great leader who clearly foresees not only the pressing problems but also the future problems of our revolution, shows the correct ways and methods and gives sagacious advice, and renewed their resolve to fully implement his teachings.

After concluding the meeting, the great leader cast his eyes upon the endless expanse of beautiful mountains and rivers of the country for a while and was deeply moved.

Onsong Street was seen in the centre of the southwestern plain where fertile fields of Changdok and Seson-ri were spread endlessly from the foot of Mt. Wangjae and the head stream of the Tuman River was meandering silently. Not far from it, the majestic Hamgyong range stretched from Mt. Chung.

As if charmed by them, the great leader gazed at the mountains and fields for a while. Indeed, all this was an epitome of the beautiful scenery of the country.

Following the eyes of the great leader, the political workers and chiefs of the underground revolutionary organizations also looked down with refreshed minds the coal mine and the rural villages where they were engaged in activities, and mountains and fields, rivers and valleys.

The scenery was familiar to them, but that day when they hailed the

great sun of the nation, the mountains, fields and rivers looked brighter and more beautiful as if they were enveloped with boundless emotion.

They were tense with hatred and indignation, for such beautiful land was trampled down under the hobnailed jackboots of the brigandish Japanese aggressors and deeply resented the grinding poverty and rightlessness of the people.

They were determined to accelerate the advance into the homeland to plant the bright future in the hearts of 20 million fellow countrymen waiting for relief.

Suppressing his rending heart, the respected leader renewed his firm resolve to hasten the advance into the homeland.

Looking round at the political workers and the chiefs of the underground revolutionary organizations, he said:

"Because of its fine scenery, fertile land and rich underground resources, Onsong on the bank of the Tuman River is good to live. Now this beautiful country is groaning under the boots of the enemy. We, Koreans, can never be slaves of Japanese imperialism, nor can we live under the same skies with it. We must unite the entire people and drive out the enemy from this land.

"To this end, you, the vanguard of the revolution, should actively rally the masses in the organizations and rouse the entire people to the sacred war against Japanese imperialism.

"Back at your posts, you should plant your foot firmly among the popular masses and fight resolutely to bring nearer the day of national liberation."

Taking his instructions to heart they pledged: "Comrade Commander, the people in the homeland will fight more resolutely in order to live up to your great trust and expectations."

The mountains and plains were still covered with snow and the rivers frozen. But spring was advancing under the snow and the layer of ice.

Eyeing them affectionately he said as he shook their hands firmly:

"Comrades, take care of yourselves and fight well."

His best wishes brought tears to their eyes.

After bidding goodbye to the revolutionary soldiers at home, the respected leader descended the mountain and crossed the river.

Some members of the First Company who had been sent to take over

material from the organizations at home at the foot of Mt. Wangjae and those on a defensive mission assembled at the rendezvous.

The unit returned to Macun, Xiaowangqing, with great joy over the tremendous success scored by the respected leader in the homeland.

After the historic Wangjaesan Meeting, the revolutionary organizations and the political workers in the homeland waged a determined struggle for the implementation of the strategic and tactical policy put forward by the great leader.

The political workers and the chiefs of the underground revolutionary organizations in Onsong area renamed the Worker-Peasant Union the "Peasants Mutual Aid Association" as he had taught and took energetic steps to build it up into a mass organization by enlisting broad masses of peasants.

Under the conditions of the strict Japanese surveillance, a legal evening school or a friendship society was formed to recruit vast sections of the peasantry, who were introduced to revolutionary ideas through patient education. The membership of the mutual aid association was increased and the best of the core members were sent to the villages where there was no organization so as to expand the organization.

The revolutionary organization grew rapidly, forming many branches in Korea's northern areas flanking the Tuman River:

The Kyongwon Young Businessmen Association was formed in Kyongwon County (now, Saebyol County—*Tr.*), the Chosan Anti-Japanese Youth Association in Unggi County (now, Sonbong County—*Tr.*), and Wonjong Peasants' Association in Kyonghung County (now, Undok County—*Tr.*), and the Anti-Japanese Revolutionary Supporters' Association in the Tomakdong Gold Mine. These organizations rallied the patriotic people under the banner of the anti-Japanese national united front which had been proposed by the respected leader.

The people strengthened different forms of anti-Japanese struggle and assisted the AJPGA and the guerrilla zones. Salt, cloth, explosives, footwear, torches, mimeographs and other controlled articles were sent in quantities into the guerrilla zones via Seson-ri and other secret liaison places along the river.

From August 1933 until early next year, the underground revolutionary organization in Hoeryong district, under the legal signboard

of the "Korea-Japan Forwarding Agency", procured hundreds of kilogrammes of explosives, medical supplies and cloth to the value of several thousand *won*, more than 1,000 pairs of shoes and upwards of 60 torches, and sent them to the guerrilla zones.

Onsong and many other townships in northern Korea successfully served as political and military bases and logistic bases for extending the anti-Japanese armed struggle to the homeland.

The respected leader sent many political workers into the homeland in order to rouse the ever-mounting anti-Japanese feelings of the people in northern Korea and to give better assistance to the work of the underground revolutionary organizations in the homeland. These political workers were dispatched under cover of armed units or disguised as smugglers. Some of them went on a mission to settle down and work in the homeland and others to deliver his directives and propaganda materials to the political workers in the homeland.

From April to August in 1933 after the Wangjaesan Meeting, a woman political worker made several trips to the liaison place near the Kwangmyong village, Chongsong County, Korea, to further the activities of the revolutionary organizations.

Her first task was to deliver propaganda material to be distributed among the people in the homeland on May Day.

Having hidden the text of the material into a thread-ball, and wearing her best clothes she travelled to Namyang by a frontier train from where she took a train for Chongsong. In the train the enemy tried to search out "suspects" but found no clue to the woman political worker doing needlework with the thread-ball containing the secret notes.

She arrived at the destination safely and handed over the message to a political worker at the secret liaison place near Kwangmyong village.

According to the policy outlined at the Wangjaesan Meeting, liaison points and secret camps were established in Dunggyonggol and many other places along the Tuman River, through which the respected leader gave guidance to the underground revolutionary organizations in the homeland.

In accordance with this policy he ordered the AJPGA to conduct vigorous military actions in the Tuman River areas so as to provide a military cover for the activities of the political workers and the under-

ground revolutionary organizations in the homeland.

Crossing and recrossing the river, the small units of the AJPGA fought many engagements, including an encounter at Unam, Chongsong County; a raid at the Unyong Police Sub-station, Hoeryong County; and attack on the Changdok Ferry, and thus set the enemy shivering with terror.

Especially the small units relentlessly eliminated the wicked policemen and stooges who tried to ferret out the secrets of the underground revolutionary organizations.

In the summer of 1933 the AJPGA was asked by the Onsong district revolutionary organization to liquidate the vicious policeman surnamed Choe.

In charge of the control over the human traffic between Onsong and Liangshuiquanzi, the villain behaved so viciously that the members of the organization were suffering a great deal.

Feeling sorry for their sufferings, the respected leader assigned this task to Comrade Choe Chun Guk, a competent commander of the AJPGA.

Wearing respectable clothes, he and his comrade left the guerrilla zone for Onsong.

They crossed the Tuman River and joined the wayfarers. They looked out for a man wearing a hat made of wood shavings, who, they were told, would stand behind the ill-natured policeman Choe and wave a towel.

In Onsong Street they found this policeman wearing his black uniform in front of the man who was signalling. Thus confirmed, Comrade Choe Chun Guk went close behind him and nimbly finished him off when he turned around the corner of a lane where it was lonely. Then he crossed the river again calmly.

The news that the vicious Choe had been punished in broad daylight by the guerrillas spread all over Onsong, and struck terror into the hearts of police and wicked stooges who feared that they might meet the same fate with Choe's.

The vigorous military activities conducted everywhere by the small units of the AJPGA frightened the enemy and afforded favourable conditions for the establishment of a semi-guerrilla zone in the homeland.

In step with these military units, the underground revolutionary

organizations in the homeland fought more stubbornly to convert northern Korea into a strong military and political base, into a logistic base, for the armed struggle. The policy put forward at the historic Wangjaesan Meeting was being implemented successfully.

II. THE TUMAN RIVER GUERRILLA ZONE—THE STRATEGIC CENTRE FOR THE KOREAN REVOLUTION

I. A NEW SOCIETY IN THE TUMAN RIVER AREA

(1) THE ESTABLISHMENT OF A REAL PEOPLE'S GOVERNMENT

It was in late February 1933 that the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung returned to Macun, Xiaowangqing, from his long, difficult trip to north and south Manchuria.

The conditions in the guerrilla zone at the time were very hard and complex. The needs and difficulties were many in the fledgling guerrilla zone. Having lost their houses and utensils as a result of the enemy's "punitive operations", people flocked in endlessly.

Made up of mountain villages from the start, the Tuman River guerrilla zone unlike other areas was short of everything, and the two-and three-fold increase of the population in a few months had added to the shortage of food and shelter.

Still worse, the Japanese imperialist aggressors left no stone unturned to strike out at the new guerrilla zone in its cradle. They sent in "punitive forces" more often than not and infiltrated their agents into the zone in an attempt to ferret out the situation there.

The obtaining revolutionary situation urgently required a revolutionary government, a powerful weapon for smashing the counter-revolutionary offensive of the enemy, solidly building up the guerrilla

zone, quickly stabilizing the people's livelihood and providing them with a worthy life.

Only when a revolutionary government was established in the guerrilla base—liberated area, would the old social and economic relations and administration be replaced by a revolutionary and democratic system and order and the guerrilla zone fully perform its mission and role as the strategic base for armed struggle. It would also render it possible to guarantee real political freedoms and rights to the people in the zone, make them lead an independent and creative life as they please and give full rein to their revolutionary enthusiasm and creative activities for the victory of the armed struggle.

The establishment of a revolutionary government in the guerrilla base—liberated area was one of the fundamental tasks for the building, consolidation and development of guerrilla zone and the expansion and advancement of the anti-Japanese armed struggle.

The great leader regarded the question of power as fundamental to the revolution. At the historic Kalun Meeting, defining the character of the Korean revolution, he taught that a future government in our country should be a democratic one defending the interests of the workers, peasants and other broad sections of the masses. At the Mingyuegou Meeting in December 1931 he explained the popular nature and democratic tasks of a revolutionary government to be set up in the guerrilla zone.

As a result, theoretical and practical basis was laid for establishing a new type of revolutionary power corresponding to the nature of our revolution, and clear-cut ways were shown for setting up a democratic revolutionary government in the guerrilla zone.

However, due to the machinations of the sectarian-flunkeys and "Leftist" opportunists who had wormed their way into the revolutionary ranks, serious "Left" deviations were revealed in instituting power in the initial period of the establishment of guerrilla zone.

Knowing nothing about the nature and mission of our revolution and having no independent ideas, they set up a "Leftist" government and carried out ultra-"Leftist" politics in some areas of the guerrilla zone, insisting on the establishment of a "Soviet" form of government in the liberated area.

Calling for the "proletarian revolution" and "immediate realization of socialism", they completely negated private ownership and committed the ultra-"Leftist" act of confiscating even the land and domestic animals owned by anti-Japanese rich and middle peasants. They went so far as to claim to establish "collective farms", "communal labour", "communal distribution" and "communal life".

Pretending to be most revolutionary, these elements gave irresponsible orders and abuse to the people in the guerrilla zone; they drew an artificial demarcation between "red areas" and "white areas" and defined the enemy-controlled villages as "stooges' villages" and branded the people of the semi-guerrilla zone as "two-faced masses", thereby dampening the revolutionary enthusiasm of the masses and obstructing the unity and cohesion of the anti-Japanese masses.

Those who had come to the guerrilla zone with great hopes became confused and the members of the revolutionary organizations and the people in the semi-guerrilla zone and enemy-held areas watched the developments in the guerrilla zone with anxiety.

Without overcoming these reckless manoeuvres, it was impossible to build up the guerrilla zone or unite all sections of the masses.

It was just at the time that the longed-for great leader, the sun of the nation and genius of revolution, came back to Xiaowangqing. The joy and emotion of the people there were indescribable.

The news of his return instantly spread all over the Wangqing guerrilla zone. Young people of Dawangqing, old folks of Lishugou and members of the Children's Corps of Xiaobeigou, all flocked to Macun where he was.

The great leader warmly welcomed the visiting people and chiefs of the revolutionary organizations and attentively listened to them.

The people of the guerrilla zone who could not speak out what they had wanted to say due to the oppression of the sectarian-flunkeys and the "Leftist" opportunists opened up their minds to him just like a blocked stream bursting forth.

Old Won of Dawangqing had been branded as "petty-bourgeois" and deprived of his cow for the reason that he had farmed with his domestic animal, and Old Kim of Erqu had been brought to public trial because he had complained that he had to cook for himself since his son

and daughter-in-law had been all engaged in revolutionary work. There was no end to their stories.

The great leader's face clouded as he listened to their tales of woe.

When he was told about the "iron basin from Kangdong", the great leader was dumb with surprise.

It happened at the time of the establishment of a "Soviet" in Erqu, Wangqing.

The meeting to establish the "Soviet" of Erqu was held in the Xiaowangqing School. It was attended by only the leading officials of the county and delegates of the mass organizations in Dawangqing and Xiaowangqing, about 30 in all. Despite loud advertisement, the meeting was simple. Quite a few of those present returned to their villages without having a clear idea of what is a "Soviet" and how it exercises power.

The old folk of Macun who had been looking forward to the news of the meeting asked the delegate of the Dawangqing Women's Association when she came back: "What does the 'Shoebochi' (iron basin) from Kangdong look like?"

The old people had called Russia "Kangdong" and taken "Soviet" for an "iron basin". So when the establishment of a "Soviet" had been noisily advertised, they had mistaken the Soviet-founding ceremony for a gathering for distributing iron basins made in Kangdong.

The situation was so serious.

Having fully grasped the "Leftist" deviations in the incipient revolutionary power and their aftereffects, the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung quickly took positive measures for eliminating them and, at the same time, energetically organized and guided the work for setting up a real people's government in the guerrilla base—liberated area.

First of all, he called a meeting of officials of the Party, YCLK and other mass organizations in order to correct the "Leftist" opportunist deviations in the establishment of power and organize and mobilize the broad masses in setting up a people's revolutionary government, a real people's power, in the guerrilla zone.

The meeting lasted for many days which evoked great interest of the people in the guerrilla zone.

At the meeting he bitterly exposed and criticized the unreasonableness of the "Leftist Soviet" line of the sectarian-flunkeys and the "Leftist"

opportunists, and put forward the line of people's revolutionary government which further incorporated and evolved his already proposed original idea in relation to the establishment of revolutionary power. He explained:

"The government we have to set up in the guerrilla base—liberated area should be a new type of revolutionary government which aims at thoroughly carrying out the anti-imperialist, anti-feudal democratic revolution in our country and, furthermore, building socialism and communism.

"This government, therefore, should be a democratic people's revolutionary government which is based on the worker-peasant alliance led by the working class and defends the interests of all the anti-Japanese masses."

He also presented specific tasks for the establishment of people's revolutionary government.

In order to set up a real people's government, he said, it was essential, first of all, to fully expose among the people the injustice and harmfulness of the "Leftist Soviet" line put forward by the sectarian-flunkeys and the "Leftist" adventurists, give a widespread explanation and publicity of the nature, mission and superiority of the people's revolutionary government we are going to set up and energetically strive for the establishment of a new type of people's government, making it the work of the people themselves.

Pointing out that it was important for the formation of people's revolutionary government to firmly build up its socio-political foundations, he taught that the entire masses in the guerrilla zone should be welded into a single political force by closely uniting the workers, peasants and all other anti-Japanese forces, and the leading role of communists enhanced among them.

He fully explained the immediate tasks of the people's revolutionary government. After the establishment of this government, he noted, we must rely on it to carry out democratic reforms. Especially in this course it was necessary for those areas most affected by the sectarian-flunkeys and "Leftist" opportunists to forcefully press forward with the work to eliminate their consequences.

The great leader's unique line of people's revolutionary government which was based on his immortal Juche idea was a fatal blow to the ultra-"Leftist" machinations of the sectarian-flunkeys and "Leftist" opportun-

ists. It also provided a vast avenue for establishing a new type of real people's government acceptable to broad strata of anti-Japanese masses, to say nothing of the workers and peasants.

In accordance with this line the programme of the people's revolutionary government was worked out and published.

The programme can be summarized as follows:

1. To establish the people's revolutionary government which would fight against Japanese and all other imperialism, for the overthrow of the Japanese imperialist colonial rule in Korea and puppet "Manchukuo" and the liberation and independence of the Korean and Chinese people.
2. To ensure all the workers, peasants, guerrilla soldiers and commanders, students, merchants and other anti-Japanese, anti-Manchukuo and anti-imperialist masses and their families in the areas under the jurisdiction of the people's revolutionary government genuine equality as the citizens of the revolutionary government, irrespective of sex, race, religion and beliefs; guarantee those over sixteen years the right to elect and be elected; deprive the traitors to the nation, the flunkeys of Japanese imperialism and puppet "Manchukuo" and counterrevolutionaries of the right to elect and be elected, and political freedoms.
3. To raise military funds against Japan by confiscating the banks, railways, mines, enterprises, land and other property owned by Japan, all imperialism and traitors, and issue part of these funds for the poor.
4. To form a united front with all anti-Japanese oppressed nations.
5. To fight against Manchukuo and Japan with the arms of the people.
6. To abolish miscellaneous levies and taxes and enforce a uniform system of graduated taxes.
7. To guarantee freedom of speech, press, assembly, association, reading and strike.
8. To enforce an eight-hour day and a minimum wage and relieve the unemployed and needy.
9. To introduce the 2:8 system for tenant farmers.
10. To ensure the autonomy of national minorities.

This programme which formulated the political, economic, cultural and military tasks of the people's revolutionary government was the most popular and revolutionary programme which would fully safeguard the interests of the workers, peasants and other broad strata of the toiling masses and guarantee them political freedom and rights and stabilized lives.

The Party, YCLK and other mass organizations held meetings in support of the line of people's revolutionary government and its programme elaborated by the great leader for the first time in history.

Those organizations began to lay the socio-political groundwork for the establishment of people's revolutionary government, while explaining and propagating the line and programme to the broad popular masses in the guerrilla zone. At that time on the organization's instructions, I (Rim Chun Chu) worked in the Shirengou guerrilla zone.

The great leader dispatched able cadres to different parts in order to direct the work for the implementation of the line of people's revolutionary government.

Before sending them out, a political and professional lecture was organized for them.

At villages in guerrilla zones they rectified and overcame the "Leftist" closed-doorist deviations appearing in the Party and YCLK organizations, and admitted those good comrades who had been steeled and tested in practical struggle into the Party and the YCLK to build up the ranks of core elements. At the same time they positively drew different sections of masses into the mass organizations to consolidate the socio-political basis of the people's government.

The guiding cadres adopted varied forms and methods such as lecture, explanation and art performance in widely propagating the originality and correctness of the great leader's Juche-oriented line of people's revolutionary government and the contents of the government programme among the masses from all walks of life in the guerrilla zones.

Especially they explained the fact that the masters of the people's revolutionary government were the popular masses including workers and peasants and accordingly this government was a revolutionary power defending their interests and that the government would not be built by anyone but should be won through struggle by the people themselves.

Thanks to this organizational and political work among the masses the people in the guerrilla zones began to correctly understand that the people's revolutionary government was a genuine people's government, and took an active part in the work for the establishment of this government, with the high consciousness and pride of being its masters.

The political foundations were solidified for the establishment of a new type of people's government and its preparations went ahead successfully.

As conditions were created for setting up the people's revolutionary government in guerrilla zones, the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung energetically guided the popular masses to forge ahead with the work of establishing the government for themselves and set up its organs.

Since local conditions differed widely, he saw to it that the district and the village government were set up with the revolutionary organization district as the unit in those areas where conditions were favourable for the establishment of the people's revolutionary government and that in the areas where the conditions were inadequate the peasants' committee performed the function of organs of power till the step-by-step formation of the people's revolutionary government.

While organizing and guiding the general affairs for the establishment of the people's revolutionary government, he himself attended and guided a meeting to elect the delegates to the government.

The work for the establishment of the government began first in Gayahe district.

He himself went to Sishuiping in Gayahe to guide a meeting to announce the establishment of the people's revolutionary government, a new people's government. I (O Baek Ryong), too, attended this meeting.

Sishuiping is about 24 kilometres south of Wangqing. In this village there were major organs of the fifth district of Wangqing, which consisted of five revolutionary organization districts—Yaoyinggou (District No. 1), Xiaowangqing and Dawangqing (District No. 2), Dahuangwai (District No. 3), Luozigou (District No. 4) and Gayahe (District No. 5).

The great leader invited the representatives from other guerrilla zones to this meeting so as to establish the people's revolutionary government first in the Gayahe district where conditions were ripe for it, and

dynamically force this work to encourage all other guerrilla zones to follow suit.

The people of Sishuiping and other parts of Gayahe were filled with emotion and joy because they held a meeting to elect the delegates to the district committee of the people's revolutionary government in the presence of the great leader.

The Xiamodani village, some four kilometres away from Sishuiping, was the venue of the meeting for the election of delegates to the fifth district committee of the people's revolutionary government.

The meeting place was packed with people from the early morning.

Presently the meeting was declared open. Participating in the meeting together with the people of Gayahe district were members of the AJPGA and the representatives of the Party, YCLK and mass organizations in the fifth district of Wangqing. The representatives of other guerrilla zones were also present there as observers.

The great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung was the first to address the historic meeting which would announce the birth of the people's revolutionary government—the first of its kind in our country.

He mounted the rostrum acknowledging the enthusiastic cheers of the participants. After pointing out the bitter life of our people who had been deprived of their country by the enemy, Japanese imperialism, and reduced to its colonial slaves, he made clear the necessity of establishing the people's power and the nature of the people's revolutionary government. He said:

"The government we are about to set up is not ruled by a king, nor does it represent the interests of the landlords, capitalists or other individuals. On the contrary, it is the government of our people for winning freedom and independence and ensuring them their rights and happiness. This government gives peasants land and the women equal rights with men and enables everyone to receive education and to work and live in happiness.

"...To win back our country and live in happiness, we must first fight the Japanese imperialist scoundrels to the very end. Only by doing this will happiness be permanently ours.... The guerrillas must work for the people, and the people must help the guerrillas. If those who have money give their money and those who have knowledge give their knowledge, and if hundreds

of thousands of people unite with one mind and will and fight to the end, the revolution will be victorious."

This speech encouraged all present with great expectations and trust in the people's government and a high pride and self-respect of being the masters of the revolution and of the government.

The speech was applauded with thunderous cheers of hurrah.

The meeting elected the delegates to the people's revolutionary government in accordance with the will of the people.

The best workers who were devotedly working in support of the great leader's line and strategic and tactical policies of the Korean revolution were elected to the district committee of the government.

The meeting closed successfully under the guidance of the great leader.

The appearance of the first people's revolutionary government in Sishuiping was the shining victory of his Juche-motivated idea on the building of people's power and a historic event which announced to the world the birth of a new type of revolutionary government in the history of the building of working-class power.

The representatives from the guerrilla zones went back with great confidence. While bringing the great leader's historic speech to the Sishuiping electors home to the vast masses, they dynamically advanced the work for the establishment of the new type of government.

The report of the establishment of the people's government in Sishuiping under the guidance of the great leader instantly spread widely among the people in guerrilla zones in the Tuman River areas.

This heightened the people's revolutionary enthusiasm and speeded up their preparations for building such a government.

In only a few months since the great leader had criticized aftereffects of the "Leftist Soviet" line and proposed the new government line, the people's revolutionary government, a new type of revolutionary power, appeared in all guerrilla zones along the Tuman River.

To take the Wangqing guerrilla zone for example, following the establishment of the fifth district people's revolutionary government in Sishuiping, the second district government was set up in Macun and then, the first and the third district government in Yaoyinggou and Dahuangwai.

In the guerrilla zones in Yanji County the new government appeared in Wangougou, Sandaowan and Bagou (Shirengou), and in the Hunchun and Helong guerrilla zones, the district government was set up in Huangqu, Yanqu, Banqu and Yulangcun.

Besides the district government, a village people's revolutionary government was established in all guerrilla zones.

After the establishment of district and village governments in the guerrilla zones, the great leader saw that a well-regulated structural system of the government bodies was set up in conformity with the mission and tasks of the government and the conditions of the guerrilla zones.

The district people's revolutionary government consisted of a head and deputy head, 9-11 executive members, and departments for land, military, economy, food, education, communications and medical aid.

The government enforced democratic reforms and policies in order to carry out the immediate tasks which the great leader had proposed, and implement its programme which he had drawn up and made public.

The government granted political freedom and rights to the peoples in the guerrilla zones, whereas it exercised strict dictatorship over the counterrevolutionaries and class enemy. It deprived the reactionary landlords, wicked capitalists, pro-Japanese stooges and traitors to the nation of all their political freedom and rights.

The great leader guided the government to carry out agrarian and other economic reforms, too.

He gave the slogan: **"Land to the Tiller!"** and made certain with a warm loving care that the land of Japanese imperialists, pro-Japanese landlords and traitors was confiscated without compensation and distributed free among peasants who had no or little land.

A strict class principle was observed in the agrarian reform.

Prior to the reform, he organized the agrarian reform preparatory committee, which made a concrete investigation of the area of land, and the number of farm households and breadwinners in the guerrilla zones to give land first to the poorest.

According to the agrarian reform principle set forth by him, the preparatory committee surveyed all land in the guerrilla zone and graded it into three categories. It also investigated the actual conditions of the people and took a census of farmers.

Having made full preparations in accordance with his teaching, the committee carried out the agrarian reform in Yongchangdong in the fifth district, Wangqing guerrilla zone on a trial basis.

On that day representatives and other people from guerrilla zones came there to see it.

At the land distribution meeting the head of the Yongchangdong people's revolutionary government underscored the significance of the reform in the development of our revolution and read out the names of allottees and the amount of distributed land. And he went out to drive in a peg in each of the issued plots.

The peasants who became the masters of land for the first time in their life shed tears of joy, scooping soil from their issued paddies and dry fields. They were those people who had crossed the Tuman River in quest of a living after losing the land they had farmed because they did not own it, or landless hired hands of the landlords. It had been their life-time desire to till their own land, though small, as they pleased. It was also the centuries-old aspiration of our peasants. Now their ardent desire came true thanks to the great leader.

It seemed like a dream.

Tears of emotion streamed down the wrinkled cheeks of an old woman who was feeling the peg bearing the name of her son who had been shot dead by Japanese imperialists at the head of the Autumn Harvest Struggle, the young people who were dancing, beating drums and gongs, and the people from other guerrilla zones who were witnessing the scene.

Following the first agrarian reform in Yongchangdong, it was carried out simultaneously in other guerrilla zones along the Tuman River.

The first-grade land went preferentially to the bereaved families of the revolutionary martyrs, hired hands, poor peasants and families of the AJPGA soldiers. The third-grade plot was less fertile than the first and second grade but larger in area. This land distribution was of great importance in strengthening the class position in the guerrilla zones.

The per household amount of distributed land ranged from 5,000 to 6,000 *pyong* on an average.

The peasants' enthusiasm rose high.

After the reform, the great leader introduced democratic reforms in the industrial domain. The lumber stations and gold mines run by

Japanese imperialism and its lackeys were confiscated by the government, and an eight-hour working day was introduced for workers according to the programme.

The old tax system was replaced by a new popular one.

Democratic reforms and policies were effected in the cultural domain: Many schools were set up to give free education to the members of the Children's Corps, and the adult education system was established for the political and general education of people in the guerrilla zones.

People's hospitals were established in the zones to render free medical aid, and prophylactic work was given priority to promote the health of the people.

Inside the guerrilla zones many publishing houses were set up, which issued the great leader's classics including *Let Us Wipe Out Factionalism and Strengthen the Unity and Cohesion of the Revolutionary Ranks,* publicity material and textbooks for the Children's Corps schools and adult schools. They also printed appeals which struck terror into the hearts of the enemy.

In addition, shops for tailors and gunsmiths appeared in the guerrilla zones.

Thanks to the democratic reforms and policies carried out by the great leader, the people in the guerrilla zones who had long been squeezed and ill-used felt strong and led a happy and hopeful life, though everything was in short supply and the enemy's "punitive operations" were repeated.

The guerrilla zone was a world where there was neither Japanese imperialism, nor landlord nor capitalist, and a new world where the people, once downtrodden and humiliated, hunger-stricken and ill-clad, became owners of everything and lived happily, working and studying to their hearts' content.

With the infinite pride and self-respect of having their great leader in the person of respected Comrade Kim Il Sung for the first time in their national history of thousands of years and living in a new people's land provided by him, the people in the guerrilla zones made strenuous efforts to materialize his far-sighted plan to defeat the Japanese imperialist aggressors as early as possible and build socialism and communism in the land of three thousand *ri*.

As a result of the establishment of the people's revolutionary

government, a genuine people's power, and the enforcement of agrarian and other democratic reforms and policies in the guerrilla zones along the Tuman River under the wise guidance of the great revolutionary leader Comrade Kim Il Sung, the guerrilla bases or liberated areas were being converted into more powerful strongholds for our revolution.

(2) GUIDANCE TO THE WORK OF PARTY, YCLK AND OTHER MASS ORGANIZATIONS

The great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung, though busy leading the anti-Japanese revolutionary war to shining victory, paid deep attention to the work of Party, YCLK and other mass organizations.

In accordance with his wise policy for building Party organizations from bottom to top, basic Party organs and mass organizations were formed and activized in the guerrilla zones along the Tuman River.

Pointing out that the new circumstances, in which the anti-Japanese war had started, guerrilla zones appeared and the revolutionary spirit of the masses grew higher, provided favourable conditions for building up the internal revolutionary forces stronger throughout the country, he earnestly reiterated the need to push ahead on broader basis with preparations for the building of a party and the laying of mass foundations for the revolution.

In the early autumn of 1933, he summoned me (Choe Hyon) to the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone.

He talked with me for a long time, giving the precious instructions on fully accelerating the preparations for founding a party by taking advantage of the favourable conditions—the formation of the AJPGA and the establishment of guerrilla bases or liberated areas.

Proceeding from the actual conditions of our revolution he first elucidated the need and the policy for the foundation of a revolutionary party.

The respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung said:

"If we are to achieve our cause of national liberation and independence,

we must have a Marxist-Leninist party. Furthermore, our revolutionary struggle will not end with the achievement of the liberation and independence of the country. Our consistent stand is to turn our country into a socialist state like the Soviet Union in the future. How can we expect to tackle this far-reaching task without the General Staff of revolution? The Party is the lodestar for all our victories. It is, therefore, the most urgent and fundamental task confronting us, Korean communists, to found a Marxist-Leninist party. Yet, we should not decide to form the Party right away in our conditions as insisted by certain factionalists. If we think it possible to do so without any preparations and accumulation of revolutionary forces, it is nothing but an idle fancy like proposing to build a house in the air. We, therefore, ought to lay step by step organizational and ideological basis for founding the Party in a most prudent and energetic way."

He taught one by one the important requirements for building the organizational and ideological basis for the foundation of a party.

What was most important, he said, was to train communists and steadily expand their ranks in the practice of armed struggle and underground activities through the guerrilla units and revolutionary organizations and thus form the organizational backbone for a party.

He also emphasized the necessity to steadily expand the armed ranks and train and steel the communists in the flames of arduous struggle, form the basic Party organizations in the full- and semi-guerrilla zones and the enemy-dominated areas and constantly temper the Party membership through the organized life and practical struggle, and to rally the broad revolutionary forces at home and abroad in different anti-Japanese revolutionary organizations, enlist progressive elements from among them in the guerrilla units and Party organizations and foster them into communists.

He described it as important to clear the communist ranks of factionalism, dogmatism, opportunism and all other erroneous ideas and achieve the organizational and ideological purity and unity of the revolutionary ranks. Pointing out that we should not forget the bitter lessons drawn from the enormous harm the factionalists had caused to the communist movement, he sharply blamed some of these factionalists lurking in the revolutionary ranks for their despicable attempts to disorganize the ranks of Korean communists from within, alienating our

comrades from each other under the slogan of "anti-Minsaeng-dan" struggle and spreading all hues of opportunist ideas. Therefore, he continued, all the communists should arm themselves firmly with the line and strategic and tactical policies of the Korean revolution and wage an implacable struggle against the factionalists and thus allow no scope for any factional activity or unsound ideology inside the revolutionary ranks.

Furthermore, the great leader placed particular stress on the need to unfold a vigorous movement for the anti-Japanese national united front so as to organize and revolutionize the workers, peasants and other sectors of the broad masses and thus build solid mass foundations for the Party.

His instructions brought home to me once again his far-sighted plan for founding the General Staff of the revolution, the real vanguard organization of the working class. At the same time a surge of warmth flooded my heart as I recalled his painstaking efforts to start preparations anew for the founding of a party from scratch, as the old Party had been destroyed and soiled by the sectarian-flunkeys.

The bitter lessons of the early history of our communist movement brought him to energetically strive to lay, step by step, organizational and ideological foundations for the Party since he embarked upon the road of revolution in his early years.

He put forward a wise policy of forming basic Party organizations as a means for guaranteeing the organizational and ideological purity and unity of the communist ranks and fostering the hard-core communists.

This policy gave rise to the appearance of Party organizations in different places as far back as the period of preparing for the anti-Japanese armed struggle.

While establishing the guerrilla zones following the foundation of the AJPGA, he saw to the formation of basic Party organizations in the guerrilla army and the guerrilla zones.

The basic Party organizations enabled the Korean communists to work in accordance with the rules on the Party life and successfully play the vanguard role in their respective posts.

The appearance of the basic Party organizations marked a milestone in the organizational and ideological preparations for the founding of the Party.

The great leader attached tremendous significance to the work of the

basic Party organizations and directed it with might and main. For this he would go long distances to visit the district Party committees and cells, and attend the Party cell meetings of the companies of the AJPGA to teach the Party method of work and explain the standard of Party life.

When I study the Chongsan-ri spirit and the Chongsan-ri method, I would impressively recall how he directed the activities of the Party organizations in guerrilla zones in early 1933.

One day early in 1933 the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung started out for Dabeigou to direct the work of District No. 1 Party committee of Wangqing and cells under it.

Informed of his visit the director of the district organizations department came to escort him. The director saddled a horse and handed him the reins.

The great leader declined, and suggested that the oldest of his companions ride the horse. But the latter refused.

"Then, let us chat, walking together," the respected leader said, as he started out.

Walking side by side with the director of the organizations department he grasped the actual affairs of Dabeigou. He asked about the local terrain and found out the way the people lived.

The director promptly spoke out the names of mountains and rivers when asked, but in most cases he could not tell about the living conditions of the people in the guerrilla zone and the activities of the mass organizations.

The great leader's specific questions exposed the director's lack of knowledge of the life in the zone.

Smiling, the great leader said that for its adequate work the Party organization should know everything which enabled it to fully perform its role as a vanguard.

In the evening he learned that the director of the propaganda department of the county Party committee was going to give a lecture to the village people. Despite his fatigue from the long journey he went to the lecture place.

The district Party organizations director offered him a seat in the front row. But the great leader would not take it but seated himself at the back quietly.

The lecture began. The lecturer spoke with zest, sometimes using difficult terminology such as: "proletarian revolution" and "hegemony".

Hard to understand, the audience bent their heads, looking at each other.

When the lecture was over, the respected leader went over to the rostrum and began:

"Let me have a few words.

"Dear friends! You are revolutionaries. But quite a few of you do not know well for what we are engaged in the revolution."

Thus starting without any formality, he gave a brief and easy account of the character and basic tasks of our revolution, the nature and immediate tasks of the people's revolutionary government and the prospects of our revolution.

He outlined the lecturer's hour-long speech in less than 20 minutes in easy-to-understand terms.

The dozing people woke and the audience became dead quiet.

When the speech was over the audience rose to their feet and applauded enthusiastically.

Back to his lodging he conversed with the organizations director.

Asked by the great leader the director spoke about his past life.

Starting his life inside the Party organization in 1930 he had been in prison and engaged in the YCLK work. He was proud of his revolutionary activity started from his early years and held the responsible post of the organizations director for the district Party organization. Yet in fact, he knew little about the Party work.

Delighted to meet the great leader in person and receive his teaching, he revealed the actual conditions without reserve for his guidance.

The Dabeigou district Party organization had not a work plan. It could not map it out, because it did not know what to do. It had merely tackled problems as they arose, and had been unable to carry out its work with purposefulness in conformity with the actual conditions of the guerrilla zone. As things stood in the district Party organization, the conditions of the Party cells in the villages needed no description.

Till late at night the great leader heard the concrete conditions of District No. 1 Party organizations from the organizations director and

gave him a priceless instruction which would bring about a turn in the Party work.

He explained to the director:

"Having no work plan means having no plan of operations. No commanding officer would organize battles without the plans of operations. Party work, too, needs proper operation.

"Then, what kind of work should the district Party organization plan and carry out?

"First of all, it should adequately conduct the education of Party members.

"Now our Party members have a high revolutionary enthusiasm and are prepared to unhesitatingly risk their lives in the interests of the revolution. Yet, because of their poor knowledge they are unable to work better and discover the crafty manoeuvres of the sectarian-flunkeys. It is indispensable to organize studies and lectures for the Party members so that they can correctly understand the line and strategy and tactics in relation to the Korean revolution.

"We have already made clear the line and strategic and tactical policies of the Korean revolution and the immediate problems at the Kalun Meeting, two Mingyuegou Meetings and the recent Wangjaesan Meeting. If the Party members conduct deep studies, they would never be irresolute in their activities.

"The district Party organization must also conduct a regular work to increase the Party membership.

"The start of the anti-Japanese war and the formation of guerrilla zones provide very favourable conditions for this work. In the guerrilla zones there are many communists, and fine comrades are steadily growing in revolutionary practice. They must be given systematic training and admitted into the Party ranks. This will be precisely the process of preparing organizational backbone for the founding of the Party.

"In addition, the district Party organization must give proper guidance to the work of the mass organizations.

"Now the vast revolutionary masses from different strata are enlisted in the Peasants' Association, the AIL, the RMAS, the Women's Association and other mass organizations.

"If the Party is to enlist and mobilize the strength of the masses

properly, it must lead the mass organizations so that they can carry out a good work.

"We must expect severe trials in the future. In order to overcome these ordeals, we need to more closely unite all the people in the guerrilla zones to bring them up to be revolutionaries without exception, and energetically strive to rally, to the side of the revolution, all the people in the distant enemy-held areas, to say nothing of the people in the semi-guerrilla zones around the guerrilla zones.

"All this work we, communists, should organize, and in District No. 1 you, comrades in the district Party organization, must do that. Then, can you tackle this difficult and complex work without any work plan?

"The work must be planned meticulously and all Party members be given specific assignments so that the Party organizations get on the move."

He also told a number of problems that may arise in the work with the mass organizations and specific methods of work.

Staying in Dabeigou for more than ten days after his conversation with the organizations director, he inspected District No. 1 Party committee and the village Party cells for concrete guidance.

Then he called the chiefs of the Party, YCLK and mass organizations from Tangshuihezi, Longshuidong, Yaoyinggou, Dabeigou, Xiaobeigou and other villages and clearly explained their tasks and the methods of work.

Having returned to Xiaowangqing after his inspection of District No. 1 Party organizations he organized in Macun a short course for the heads of the Party, YCLK and other mass organizations inside the guerrilla zone.

The short course was aimed to teach them how to conduct the organizational and political work with the masses and rectify their style of work.

The short course lasted for many days, and the great leader himself gave lectures which acted as a guideline for the political workers' style of work.

The respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung said:

"The success of the political work with the masses depends largely on the preparedness of the political workers who carry it out and their style of work.

"If a political worker is to work among the masses, he must, first of all, look on himself as a faithful servant of the people. He must respect and trust the popular masses and carry on his activities with the faith that only the popular masses are powerful enough to win the revolution. He must also wear the clothes the popular masses wear, use their words and strive to satisfy their needs.

"If he does not keep this stand, but considers himself somebody distinguished from the masses, he will naturally change his way of speaking, and be rude and impolite to old people and ask the masses for unreasonable things.

"Evidently the masses will not follow him. They will not believe in his words. A political worker who does not enjoy confidence of the masses will become as good as a general without soldiers."

After the short course, the great leader saw to it that the chiefs of the Party, YCLK and mass organizations looked round Macun where there was the headquarters of the revolution. His objectives were to let the political workers follow up what they had learned in the short course through object study.

With this in view, he had long since given tasks and specific guidance to District No. 2 Party organization and the Party cell in Macun to set an example.

Originally Macun had been a village of the Mas families. Before the formation of a guerrilla zone it was a small village with a few houses. Since the headquarters of the Korean revolution was established and major revolutionary organs set up, the number of houses and population had increased considerably.

The limpid Xiaowangqing stream flowed through the heart of the village and some two kilometres westward down the river there was Mt. Bbyojok. It was an important peak defending the gateway to the Xiaowangqing valley and the observation post there commanded a bird's-eye view of Wangqing Street.

A little distance from the village to Lishugou valley there stood two log cabins, of which the front one housed the headquarters of the revolution.

Staying there the great leader guided the Korean revolution as a whole and directed the operations of the AJPGA and the activities of the

Party, YCLK and mass organizations.

It was here in this log cabin that the great leader gave instructions to the participants in the lecture class and received reports on their work.

With the honour and responsibility of attending on him, the Macun people were always alert and ready, and worked hard to make their village a model unit for all guerrilla zones.

They strictly guarded their village, and kept neat and tidy the Children's Corps school, dwelling houses, barracks of the AJPGA and the Anti-Japanese Self-defence Corps, the people's revolutionary government, gunsmith shop, tailor shop, publishing house and hospital. Proper order was established for life and work.

Looking round the village, the participants in the lecture class were deeply moved by the great leader's warm care enshrined in everything.

Take the Children's Corps school in Macun for example. This four-year school, which had been established by the great leader himself, had more than 80 students on its rolls. The best YCLK members were in charge of the Children's Corps, and the Women's Association members who had the strongest sense of responsibility did washing, sewing and cooking for the children. Thanks to the great leader's solicitude the members of the Children's Corps were supplied gratis with mimeographed textbooks, school accessories, uniforms and even toilet set.

The lecture and inspection in Macun greatly helped improve the political workers' method and style of work. This brought them to wage a mass struggle to acquire the revolutionary work method and the popular style of work and rebuild all the guerrilla zones on the pattern of Macun in Xiaowangqing. It was a struggle for completely eliminating the effect of the "Leftist" policies followed by the sectarian-flunkeys in the early days of the establishment of guerrilla zones and for making these zones bright, homogeneous and militant.

While teaching the officials the revolutionary work method and the popular style of work through the lecture and inspection, the great leader authored a treatise which gave an all-round analysis of the crimes of the factionalists and their methods. By studying it the Party, YCLK and mass organizations were able to root out the aftereffects of the mistakes of the sectarian-flunkeys who had caused confusion in the work at the guerrilla

zones in the early days of their birth and done great harm to the revolution.

His great classic, *Let Us Wipe Out Factionalism and Strengthen the Unity and Cohesion of the Revolutionary Ranks,* was issued in booklet form on May 10, 1933 in the guerrilla zone.

In this book he made a scientific exposition of the cause of the appearance in our communist movement of factionalism, which was the product of bourgeois and petty-bourgeois ideas, chiefly individual heroism and fame-seeking careerist tendency, and made a historic review of the unpardonable crimes of the sectarian-flunkeys who had caused tremendous harm to the communist movement.

He also fully exposed their crafty and vicious factional methods.

He bitterly denounced that the factionalists were, without exception, flunkeys and national nihilists and philistines and renegades of the revolution who possessed neither a spark of conscience nor a sense of obligation, and called for intensifying the struggle to liquidate factionalism.

In order to carry out this struggle successfully, he taught, it was essential for all guerrillas, YCLK members and members of the revolutionary organizations to have a firm revolutionary world outlook, correctly judge everything from the revolutionary point of view and get themselves ready to fight for the good of the revolution unswervingly under difficult conditions. And all the guerrillas, YCLK members and the vast revolutionary masses should be enlisted in active anti-factional struggle so that the underhand and crafty methods of the factionalists would be brought to light before the watchful collective eyes of the revolutionary masses.

He further stated that the anti-factional struggle had to be closely linked with the work of building up the revolutionary ranks, and stressed the need to guard against both right and "Leftist" tendencies in this struggle and carry it out in principle in the interests of the revolution.

In the concluding part of his treatise he taught that the struggle to eradicate factionalism had to be conducted perseveringly and stubbornly because it was a complex and profound struggle which could not be

brought to an end in a short term and that through this struggle our revolutionary ranks should be turned into a detachment of real revolutionaries united firmly on the basis of monolithic idea and purpose.

The great leader's work was widely studied and discussed in the Party, YCLK and mass organizations in the guerrilla zones.

Through this study the revolutionary masses clearly understood the crimes and vicious and crafty methods of the factionalists, and watched their manoeuvres with bitter hatred and revolutionary vigilance.

The factionalists were caught in the network of massive surveillance.

A factional element who was in a leading position in a revolutionary organization in the Hunchun district had caused great harm to the revolutionary work. When he found it difficult to cover up his true colours, he absconded from the guerrilla zone. This was one of the examples showing how the sharp watchful eyes of the revolutionary masses struck them with terror.

The great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung directed profound attention to the work of the YCLK and other mass organizations alongside that of the Party organizations.

He attended the meetings of YCLK organizations to formulate guiding principles for these vanguard organizations of young worker and peasant masses to carry out more active organizational and political work with the masses. He would also be often present at the Women's Association meetings fully grasping their work and showing clear-cut orientations for their activities.

The greatest defect in the activities of the YCLK and other mass organizations was the improper work for winning over the masses.

The great leader thought it a great drawback that the officials of the YCLK and mass organizations were ignorant of the significance of the work for building up the mass foundations of the revolution and rude to the people.

At the meeting of YCLK officials held in Wangqing in the spring of 1933, the meeting of active Women's Association members in District No. 2, of Wangqing and other gatherings and the meeting with the chiefs of

mass organizations such as the Peasants' Association, the AIL and the RMAS, he earnestly reiterated the need to improve and strengthen the organizational and political work with the masses in conformity with the requirements of the revolutionary development.

He first pointed out that the YCLK was not good in expanding their organizations and not positive in its struggle to win over the masses.

The principal shortcoming in the organizational work of the YCLK was "Leftist" closed-doorism.

Only when the YCLK expanded and reinforced its organizations, was it possible to increase its militancy and successfully carry out its revolutionary tasks. Quite a few YCLK officials, however, were hesitant with the growth of the ranks, fearing that if the vast masses of youth were admitted into the organization, its secrets would possibly be revealed and the organization itself be endangered.

In District No. 1 of Wangqing where I(O Jin U) lived, there were many young people from the enemy-held areas. They were not admitted to the YCLK. It was a very harmful practice which would dampen the revolutionary enthusiasm of the broad masses of youth.

In the opinion of the "Leftist" closed-doorists, a small number of young people were qualified for the YCLK membership. They found faults with the young workers and peasants, because of their poor education, and rejected the students, alleging that they were still young and their backgrounds were doubtful.

They even shunned accepting into the organization those who had long been affiliated with the peasants, anti-imperialist and RMAS organizations and the Children's Vanguard, alleging that they were unreliable. In the areas where these elements were entrenched, there were only 2-3 members of the YCLK in each place.

In his speech to the Wangqing Meeting of YCLK Officials: *On the Tasks for Improving the Work of the Young Communist League,* the respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung urged the need to thoroughly repudiate the "Leftist" tendency of closed-doorism and positively draw the young people tested in the struggle against Japanese imperialism into the YCLK organizations. He taught as follows:

"YCL organizations should first admit youths who are in the guerrilla

army and those who have been tested through actual struggle in the Anti-Japanese Self-Defence Corps and other revolutionary organizations in the guerrilla zone. Meantime, they should penetrate deep into the enemy-ruled area and recruit awakened progressive youths....

"They should, above all, strive to win as members the peasant youths as well as the young workers with strong revolutionary spirit, a sense of organization and unity. The vast majority of the young people in our country are the peasant youths, most of whom are virtually rural proletarians. It is highly important to admit peasant youths with class awareness and train them to be the main force of the revolution together with the working youths.

"YCL organizations should never neglect the work of accepting progressive young students. The student youths in our country have a very high degree of national consciousness and patriotism because they are suffering from racial oppression and humiliation by Japanese imperialism. And the young students in general, regardless of their class origin, are receptive to the trend of the times and zealous in their pursuit of truth. Consequently, they can grasp the advanced communist ideology better than anyone else and pioneer the movement for socialist enlightenment. This is illustrated by the Kwangju Student Movement in November of 1929."

He warned against the "Rightist" tendency to recruit the untested and unprepared young people under the pretext of rallying the broad masses of the youth, and emphasized that it was imperative to strengthen the ideological education of the vast masses of the youth in order to build up the YCLK organizations and consolidate them.

He gave the following instructions:

"If we are to strengthen YCL organizations and get many young people to join them, we must improve their ideological education. Only when their ideological consciousness is increased through extensive and intensive ideological education, can the role of the youth be elevated in the revolutionary struggle and the historic cause of national liberation be furthered."

He further stated that the ideological education of the youth should be conducted in various forms and methods suited to their characteristics, chiefly designed to encourage their anti-Japanese patriotic sentiments and

class consciousness so that they could be active in the sacred anti-Japanese war for national liberation and independence and stand in its van.

He laid down specific methods of work for the YCLK organizations to adequately guide the activities of the Children's Corps and the Children's Vanguard, the reserve forces for the revolution, and earnestly told their officials once again to have a correct point of view about the masses and the revolutionary methods of work.

The respected leader's speech to the Wangqing Meeting of YCLK Officials served as a guideline for improving and strengthening the YCLK work.

His care and love for the YCLK organizations knew no bounds. For the purpose of giving constant guidance to the work of the YCLK organizations close at hand, he got the Wangqing County YCLK Committee to have its office in the house behind the headquarters in Macun. And he kindly told Comrade Pak Gil Song, a YCLK official, to come to the headquarters without hesitation at any time for consultation about the work of the YCLK and the Children's Corps.

Thanks to his great solicitude the YCLK organizations enlarged their ranks and increased their militant power, and creditably played their vanguard role in making worthy contribution to the work of armed units and guerrilla zones and in operations behind enemy lines.

The great leader also gave specific guidance to the Peasants' Association, the Women's Association and other mass organizations so that they could expand their ranks over wider areas and correctly guide the broad anti-Japanese forces from all walks of life.

He made a long trip to Duitoulazi in Yaoyinggou to teach the functionaries who had been sent there how to carry out the political work for the formation of the Anti-Japanese Association among the lumberjacks there. He also summoned the political workers many times from Onsong, Hoeryong, Chongsong, Kyonghung, Kyongwon, Puryong, Unggi and other northern areas of our country where they had been working to establish the Peasants' Mutual Aid Society and other mass organizations, rallying many peasants, and discussed their work in detail and gave them correct instructions.

It was soon after a hard battle fought by the AJPGA under his command in spring 1933. Having learned that the active members of the

Women's Association in District No. 2, Wangqing, were going to hold a meeting to discuss how to enhance the role of Women's Association members in the guerrilla zone, he immediately grasped the significance of the meeting. He attended it and gave highly important teachings on their tasks and role.

There was no end to his efforts and care for activating work of the Party, YCLK and mass organizations.

In order to guide their work, he went a long way to villages in the guerrilla zones almost every day. The people in Wangqing district guerrilla zones often saw him coming a long distance at predawn, his uniform drenched with dew as he had walked through forests.

As a result of his uninterrupted long tour of guidance, exposing himself to night dew and walking on the untrodden snow at daybreak, organizational and ideological preparations were pushed ahead step by step for the founding of our Party and the mass foundations of the anti-Japanese armed struggle consolidated.

Thanks to his wise guidance and dynamic activities, basic Party organizations were formed one after another in the semi-guerrilla zones and the enemy-held areas, to say nothing of in the guerrilla army and the guerrilla zones, central guidance was ensured over them, and the organizational and ideological purity of the revolutionary ranks and their unity of will and purpose further cemented. At the same time radical improvement was made in the work of the Party, YCLK and mass organizations and the broad masses of different sectors were organized and revolutionized, which built up foundations for welding the whole nation into a militant unit.

As the internal revolutionary forces grew in strength, the Korean revolution progressed more dynamically.

(3) FOR THE BUILDING UP OF RESERVE FORCES FOR THE REVOLUTION

Busy as he was directing the work for consolidating the newly established guerrilla zone over vast Tuman River areas and stoutly defending it against enemy attacks, the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung directed profound attention at all times to fostering strong reserve forces for the revolution.

Early in the spring of 1933 he evaluated the work of the Children's Corps in Xiaobeigou in the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone and other places, and told to the YCLK officials who were in charge of this work:

"The members of the Children's Corps are reserves of the YCLK and masters of the future. To bring them up well is a most important problem related to the future destiny of our revolution.

"You must make every possible effort to bring them up well to be fine communist revolutionaries and masters of the future who would carry forward our revolutionary cause."

Listening to his earnest instructions which were expressive of the great expectations and trust in the rising generations, the YCLK officials blushed with great mortification.

Before he visited Xiaobeigou for the first time, the work of the Children's Corps there was not successful; the guiding system was inadequate and educational measures for its members were insufficient.

Especially the children who had been deprived of their parents by the enemy were inadequately protected and nursed. The orphans were ill-fed and ill-clothed and their lodging was poor.

It was at this time that he came to Xiaobeigou.

His visit threw the village into a festive mood. With other village people, I (O Jin U) who had been engaged in the YCLK work rushed out to welcome him warmly.

Smiling all over, the great leader waved to the cheering people. When he found a pretty little girl waving her hand among the welcomers lining

the road, he took her in his arms and walked along.

It was the most auspicious occasion ever seen in this village.

In the evening a meeting was held in his honour. The members of the Children's Corps entertained him with songs and dances. The night was far advanced when the performance was over. The revolutionary organization was about to bring him to his lodging.

But he did not go to bed. Past midnight, when all the lights were out and people asleep he started out for the Children's Corps School. At night the school served as a lodging for the orphan children.

The company commander accompanying him told him to visit it the next morning, because the night was far advanced. But he replied that he wouldn't like to sleep without seeing how the children were sleeping in this cold night.

The early spring cold wind was drifting the snow which was still frozen.

The school was a small log cabin at the foot of the back mountain.

His visit late in the night embarrassed the chief of the Children's Corps, who tried to wake up the children.

But he told the chief not to rouse them from their sweet sleep, and inspected their beddings.

The floor was spread with the bark of lime trees as there was no even reed mat, and big and small children were lying, huddled up in their clothes.

He looked at them in grim silence and his face clouded.

The youngest girl called'Saeng Gum turned round in her sleep, as if feeling uncomfortable. From time to time she scratched her head. She seemed 6 or 7 years old, who should have slept in her mother's bosom.

The respected leader who had been watching her gravely, went over to lay her aright and warmly stroked her dishevelled hair. Then he untied the knapsack near the girl.

It contained some pine resin, a few matches, a pencil stub, and nothing else. He placed it back, and looked round at the children's footwear. They were all worn-out straw sandals.

The company commander and the Children's Corps chief hung their heads in awe.

After some deep thought, the respected leader Comrade

Kim Il Sung said to the company commander:

"Those who feel at peace, leaving the children in this state are not communists. Why can't we spread a sheet of easily available Prunus Padus tree-bark mat? Children cannot comb their hair regularly because they have no combs. Can we do nothing but this? It all depends on one's viewpoint.

"How could we remain indifferent to them like this? Have we forgotten that they are priceless children of our departed comrades and they would grow up into the reserve forces who would carry forward our revolutionary cause?"

The next day he left Xiaobeigou.

Some days later, a fully loaded horse-drawn cart pulled into the yard of the Children's Corps School. In the cart were neat tree bark mats and children's shoes. They were the great leader's gift to the school children.

The bark of lime trees on the floor was replaced by new tree bark mats which were large enough for the room. The shoes all fitted well.

The children jumped for joy clapping their hands. But the chief of the Children's Corps, shaken with emotion, burst into sobs. The chief was a young girl who had undergone great hardships together with the children, sometimes weeping furtively.

Without wiping away her tears she said to the children:

"The General is busy commanding the guerrillas. But he was so solicitous for our Children's Corps. We should not forget his kindness.

"Let us study hard and always be ready to be real members of the Communist Children's Corps, strong reserves for the Korean revolution, as he wishes."

"Always be ready!" the Children's Corps members responded vigorously.

From that day on, the life of the Xiaobeigou Children's Corps members became better noticeably. Bright songs and merry laughter rang always, and their everyday studies and training were full of vigour.

They kept their school shipshape and lived a well-regulated life.

Afterwards, the great leader constantly looked after the members of the Children's Corps in Xiaobeigou. Each time he organized an engagement, he told the guerrillas to capture what was necessary for their life and studies, and he would find out if there was anything for the children in the war trophies.

Once flannel was captured in a battle. A logistics officer wanted it sent to the tailor shop to make winter underwear for the guerrillas.

On this, the respected leader suggested:

"Send it to the tailor shop to make underwear not for the guerrillas but for the Children's Corps members. Let the children be clad warmly even if we feel a bit cold. When the children tremble with cold in unlined clothes, can we feel warm even if we are thickly clothed...?"

The flannel was all sent to the tailor shop for children's underwear.

When the clothes were ready, the great leader called on the Children's Corps in Xiaobeigou with the undergarments and the daily necessities captured in a battle.

The children surrounded him and were beside themselves, clinging to the skirts of his coat.

Stroking their heads with tenderness he chatted with them. He spotted the youngest girl Saeng Gum, embraced her in his arms and sat down on a log nearby.

With the girl on his lap, he asked her how old she was and when her parents died. As if something had suddenly occurred to him he took out a comb from his pocket and set her hair right. He was still remembering the girl scratching her head as she turned on her side.

He asked if she was missing her mother who used to comb her hair while at home.

"No, dear General," the girl replied, and threw her arms around his neck. She bit her lips in an effort not to cry, but tears trickled down from her eyes.

When they saw this, the other children too buried themselves in the General's arms and burst into sobs.

Hugging the children, orphans of those who had followed the revolutionary organization, the children who looked on him as their father, the great leader looked afar across their shoulders, hardly able to hide his mental anguish.

The political workers of the guerrilla army in his company hung their heads, swallowing the lump in their throats. Nothing on earth could be greater and nobler than his love. The great leader was virtually the real father of children in the guerrilla zones.

After a long while the respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung said in a hoarse voice:

"You must never forget the enemy who murdered your fathers and mothers so cruelly.

"Your parents quit their own land only to suffer much at the hands of the Japanese imperialists, landlords and capitalists in this foreign land where mountains and rivers are unfamiliar, and were killed in cold blood. We must risk our lives in our fight against the enemy who deprived you of your parents, brothers and sisters, and who still torments us.

"We must exert ourselves to defeat the Japanese imperialists, with our united strength, and bring closer the day when we will lead a happy life in our three thousand-*ri* land of natural beauty.

"In order to be fine sons and daughters of Korea, you should become intelligent and gallant members of the Children's Corps who are honest in their studies and good at sentry duty and liaison and reconnaissance activities. You must also be at home in art performance and physical exercise to become excellent Children's Corps members of Korea who are wise, healthy and well-mannered."

The Children's Corps members in Xiaobeigou were infinitely happy under his unbounded loving care. They studied well and grew up cheerfully and soundly, not bothered if food and clothing were sometimes insufficient.

This was not the isolated case, however.

The respected leader stretched his hands of love to all the members of the Children's Corps in Macun, Shiliping, Gayahe, Yaoyinggou, Dabeigou, Beidong, Wangougou, Fuyandong, Zhangcaicun, Shirengou, Sandaowan, Dahuanggou, Yantonglazi, Yulangcun and other guerrilla zones.

When some boxes of Korean apples were captured from the enemy he did not take any of them but sent them all to the Children's Corps members in the guerrilla zone, saying: "The children have never set foot in the Korean territory nor seen Korean apples. Let them have a taste of the apples." And he himself declined the offer of winter clothes and shoes and made arrangements so that all the children were supplied with cotton-padded clothes and cotton quilts.

It was with this affection and solicitude that he was deeply concerned

for bringing them up to be reserves of the revolution who were well prepared both intellectually and physically, and to be the future masters who were attached to the country and true to the revolution from childhood.

He sent out selected YCLK members as instructors to enlist all children of the guerrilla zone in the Children's Corps and direct their life within the organization, and appointed able workers as directors of the children's departments in counties so that unified guidance could be given to their activities.

This resulted in the strengthening of the life inside the organization of the Children's Corps and the establishment of its schools in all villages of the guerrilla zones. Thanks to his solicitude the children who had been destined to be hired hay-makers, baby-sitters and beggars after the death of their parents became Children's Corps members and studied to their hearts' content in the guerrilla zones.

When the affairs of the Children's Corps were gradually set right, he stepped up the work of its schools. It was a manifestation of his great concern for equipping all the Children's Corps members in the guerrilla zones with useful live knowledge.

In the spring of 1933, the great leader spared his precious time to visit the Children's Corps School in Shiliping.

After looking round the teaching aids and arrangements of the school, he acquainted himself with the studies of the children. When he found the children writing letters on the sand, he told the guerrilla attendants to send the white paper meant for the publishing shop to the Children's Corps Schools.

For the school children he even organized a battle and sent them lots of paper, pencils and other school supplies captured from the enemy.

That day he had a long conversation with the school teachers, giving them precious instructions as regards the improvement of children's ability, the tempering of their physical bodies and their zealous participation in socio-political activities.

Some days later he called at the Children's Corps School in Lishugou. Taking the smallest and youngest girl Sun Hui in his arms, he found out the way the children studied.

When the respected leader asked the children to show him their

notebooks, they took them out and pencils as well from the desks.

As he leafed through the notebooks, he corrected wrong letters and rectified errors in their sums. Taking up a notebook of odd size from a little boy, he smiled softly and told a nearby teacher to fetch some white paper.

When the paper was brought, he himself made a notebook of the proper size, and sharpened a pencil correctly. Showing the notebook and pencil to the teacher and YCLK officials, he advised:

"A notebook should not be too large and unwieldy but like this, which makes it convenient for children to carry it about and write. It is advisable to bind the notebook that way. And a pencil must be sharpened properly. If the point is too long, it would break easily, and if too sharp, it would write too thin letters and children would moisten it with their tongue. Therefore, the pencil should be sharpened neither too long nor to a thin point."

It was a deeper and kinder care than that of their real parents.

Under his warm loving care the Children's Corps School in Lishugou became a model unit for the education of younger generations, and all other Children's Corps Schools in the guerrilla zones followed suit, bringing about radical improvement in their educational work.

Almost all of the school children had been denied schooling in the enemy-held areas even when their parents were alive. Now they were thinking that their full learning was a great happiness brought about by the fatherly leader's solicitude. That was why they treasured the notebooks, pencils, and other school things which were gifts of the respected leader, and tried their hardest to study well.

In any place of the guerrilla zones where there was the Children's Corps, a school was set up, and resonant voices reading books rang out.

The respected leader taught us, the YCLK officials in charge of the Children's Corps affairs, to strive to get the children well prepared physically and make them take a zealous part in socio-political activities.

In accordance with his instructions, the Children's Corps Schools in the guerrilla zones organized mountaineering and military training regularly, and held athletic meets on holidays. The school children zealously participated in socio-political activities such as art performance, assistance to the guerrillas, liaison and look-out duty.

These activities, however, were not successful from the start.

Take art performance, for example.

Because of our inadequate grasp of the great leader's intention, we formed an art troupe with some Children's Corps members who had artistic talent. This prevented the popularization of art activities. And the repertoire was not revolutionary either.

Having grasped this state of affairs, the great leader came on a white horse to the Children's Corps School in Yaoyinggou.

That time school children were.engaged in artistic rehearsal around the campfire. They danced as they sang: "At a full moon night by the sea...." They were happy to give a performance, though clumsy, before the beloved leader.

The children who were dancing like butterflies as they sang looked prettier and more adorable.

After their rehearsal the children rushed over to him.

Holding their hands tight the respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung praised them for their good dancing. And he said to us, YCLK officials in charge of the Children's Corps.

"You had better rehearse more lusty, pleasant and vigorous songs and dances than these. It is also advisable that a larger number, say, 50 to 60, should do chorus and dance, and that too with vigour. Art performance must serve, above all, to encourage and educate the army and people. The song and dance of Children's Corps members must give the soldiers a strong will to defeat the enemy, and induce the people to work optimistically without any vacillation and despair at difficulties and brace themselves up to bravely defend the guerrilla zones against the 'large-scale punitive operations' of the enemy."

After pointing out the shortcomings in the artistic rehearsal, he taught them "Unity Pole" which he had created in the early days of his revolutionary activities.

Their faces wore a bright smile as they practised on the "Unity Pole" under his direction.

After his guidance to the art troupe of Children's Corps in Yaoyinggou, improvement was made in its activities in the guerrilla zone.

The art troupe consisting of a few talented Children's Corps members now comprised many children. This provided all the children in the

guerrilla zone an opportunity for growing up into able children who could dance and sing. The repertoire improved with revolutionary songs and dances including "Unity Pole" and "Prides of Thirteen Provinces" which the great leader had created.

In the process of learning and rehearsing the revolutionary songs and dances created by him in the early days of his revolutionary activities, the Children's Corps members prepared themselves better as reserve force for our revolution, and their art performance gave a powerful impetus to the struggle of the guerrillas and the people in guerrilla zones.

The art performance won wild acclamation everywhere. Struck with the performance, the people in guerrilla zones said: General Kim's guidance improved the children's art performance. For the good of these children, too, we won't give in to the enemy but defeat him, come what may.

The Children's Corps members in the guerrilla zones grow up under the loving care of the great leader. They took an active part in assisting the guerrillas, delivering secret messages, detecting the enemy's movements and doing sentry duty, and carried out many tasks skilfully and boldly. They gathered wild herbs and fruits for the guerrilla hospital and helped the people in the guerrilla zones in sowing and weeding. They nimbly shinned up the high peaks to stand on the look-out, and braved dangers to deliver secret messages to the enemy-held areas.

Among them there were many young heroes who kept their revolutionary secrets at the cost of their lives despite the enemy's cajolement and coercion when they were arrested while performing difficult missions.

The exploits of the gallant Children's Corps in the guerrilla zones along the Tuman River were given wide publicity in the *Kuguk Sinbo* and the journal of the Comintern.

Kuguk Sinbo wrote of the heroic death of girl Kim Gum Sun which made an indelible impression on many fighting people in the world.

Gum Sun was captured by the Japanese imperialist gendarmerie when she penetrated into Baicaogou, an enemy-held area. Having learned that she had come from the guerrilla zone where the AJPGA's headquarters was, the enemy cajoled, blackmailed and beat her in a bid to ferret out the secrets of the revolutionary organizations.

Resolved to risk her life and uphold the honour of the member of the Communist Children's Corps, the girl spat at a Japanese officer in answer to his stupid coercion.

The infuriated enemy tortured her cruelly. But the girl, though weltering in blood, said nothing after shouting: "I won't talk with you, scoundrels, who have burned my father and mother to death."

The fiendish enemy dragged her to the execution ground. Yet, the girl stood proudly, her head held high, and shouted to the people who were gathering there with tears in their eyes:

"Fathers and mothers! Why do you cry? Don't weep. The guerrilla uncles will surely crush the enemy. Fight on stubbornly till the fatherland is liberated....

"Down with Japanese imperialism!

"Long Live General Kim Il Sung!

"Long Live the Korean revolution!..."

Even at the last moment of her life, the girl, keeping the secret of her organization, gave the masses the confidence of the victory of the revolution, and ended her short, yet priceless life. She was only nine years old that time.

The warm embrace of the great leader grew many such young fighters and heroes, who reinforced and expanded the militant ranks of our revolution steadily.

(4) CONVERSION OF GUERRILLA ZONES INTO IMPREGNABLE FORTRESSES

The great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung energetically organized and guided the struggle for defending the fledgling guerrilla zones and the new system established there from enemy encroachment.

From the first days of the appearance of guerrilla zones, the fountainhead of the Korean revolution, over vast Tuman River areas, the Japanese imperialist aggressors, seized with fear, left no stone unturned to choke them out in their cradle.

They were well aware that as long as the AJPGA and the guerrilla zones were left intact, it was impossible to maintain their colonial rule over Korea and realize their aggressive ambition for Asian supremacy. They hysterically reported that the "red zones" along the Tuman River were a "cancer for Asian peace".

On January 18, 1933, the joint meeting of high-ranking officers from the Kwantung Army's gendarmerie, the Task Force in Jiandao of the Japanese Army stationed in Korea, the Japanese Embassy in Manchuria, the Jiandao Consulate-General, the consulate police, the North Hamgyong Provincial Police Department and the Manchurian police organ was held in the Jiandao General Consulate of Japanese imperialism. The meeting looked into the failure of the "punitive operations" in the latter half of 1932 and decided to hurl large "punitive forces" consisting of the 19th Division of the occupationist forces stationed in Ranam, Korea, the Kwantung Army and puppet Manchukuo Army into these operations.

This resulted in the incessant penetration of "punitive troops" wearing khaki dog-fur caps and overcoats, into the snow-covered forests around the Tuman River guerrilla zones.

The young AJPGA and the people in the zones were faced with unprecedented ordeals and danger.

The enemy's first "punitive" offensive was directed at the Yaoyinggou guerrilla zone.

Informed of the enemy's movements, the leading officials of the revolutionary organization in Wangqing felt quite uneasy at the report that the enemy was not the puppet Manchukuo Army, police and Self-defence Corps, but the Japanese garrison whom they had never encountered.

Citing an example from the Independence Army, some people claimed shunning the enemy on the plea of incomplete defensive preparations. Their attitude may possibly make the people in the zone believe that like the Independence Army, the AJPGA was not equal to the Japanese imperialist garrison.

The people in the Wangqing guerrilla zone still remembered what had occurred in 1920.

In those days, there was in Dawangqing the military administrative centre of the Kim Jwa Jin-led Independence Army. The numerous

members of the army had long fussed up, doing shooting practice and procuring weapons and ammunition. At the report that the Japanese troops were coming, however, they took to flight, after burying quantities of arms and ammunition.

Having studied this state of affairs deeply, the respected leader, forgot his fatigue of the tour in vast north and south Manchuria, made up his mind to immediately conduct operations in defence of the Yaoyinggou guerrilla zone. By beating back the enemy's offensive he intended to hit them hard and convince the people in the zone that fighting would bring them victory.

A company of the AJPGA was stationed in the zone. The Red Guards and the Children's Vanguard, paramilitary organizations, were small in number, and defensives were not built up.

Pointing out that guerrilla warfare was impossible when the balance of forces between us and foes was assessed simply with the number of armed forces, the respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung said to the Yaoyinggou guerrillas and the Red Guards:

"We ought to defeat the enemy's numerical superiority with our tactical superiority. As you see, Yaoyinggou forms a natural fortress, for its terrain is steep and forests are dense. There are many deep gorges and cliffs. This topographical condition makes it impossible for the enemy to deploy his armed forces as he wishes no matter how large they may be, and use their modern weapons. By taking advantage of the favourable terrain we should seize the initiative and give the enemy a decisive blow by skilfully combining decoy and ambush."

He himself led the members of the guerrilla army and the Red Guards to the mountain west of Dabeigou, which was the gateway to the Yaoyinggou guerrilla zone.

The mountain was precipitous on the highway running from Daxinggou to Yaoyinggou, and across the road there was a river. Therefore, when this point was defended, it was impassable to the enemy.

Under cover of darkness the men of the AJPGA under the command of the great leader lay in ambush stealthily.

When day broke after a long winter night, four enemy lorries came bumper-to-bumper along the road from Daxinggou. In no time they came into our ambush.

With his signal for attack, the guerrillas fired, destroying the front lorry, which brought the other vehicles to a halt. The Red Guards rolled down stones at once. The guerrillas, without wasting bullets, shot the enemy troops jumping down from the lorries one by one. The enemy forces were wiped out in no time before they could even resist. Our elated soldiers descended with a shout of joy, collected enemy's weapons, ammunition and other war supplies and set fire to the lorries.

The great leader withdrew his men a short distance and laid them in ambush at the bend of the road. He expected the remaining enemy forces to rush from Daxinggou at the urgent report. The victorious guerrillas and Red Guards were elated because they were equipped with captured new-type rifles and laid in a stock of ammunition.

As he had anticipated, before long several lorries appeared from the direction of Daxinggou. The lorries, however, pulled up 1,000 metres off and turned back after some moments' halt.

Evidently the enemy got dispirited at the sight of the burning vehicles, though inflamed with revengeful thought at first.

When the triumphant unit returned to the village, the people in the guerrilla zone, who had been collecting stones on the cliff for emergency needs, rushed down, shouting *manse* and hugged the guerrillas and Red Guardsmen.

Warning that a bigger encounter was expected the next day, for the enemy would make another attack in order to recover from his defeat, the great leader told the guerrillas to keep a proper look-out and full combat preparedness.

Without even a brief rest, he worked out tactics against the possible counteroffensive of the enemy. The tactics of going out to check the oncoming enemy on the road had been employed in the first engagement. Now the enemy would never be caught in the same trap, and his forces would be reinforced in a big way.

He sat up throughout the long winter night studying the topographical map of Yaoyinggou under a flickering lamp light.

Early the next morning, he summoned the guerrilla company commander and commander of the guardsmen and told them about the deployment of units, suggesting that ambush and decoy tactics be combined to give the first blow at the entrance to the Yaoyinggou valley

and successively hit the enemy forces, drawing them in.

On his order, the AJPGA and the Red Guards went straight to the entrance to the valley and entrenched themselves in the mountains on either side. Old people and women with children were told to take refuge in a safe place. Yet, many of the old people did not leave, insisting: "We can roll down rocks. We'll fight together. There are no criterion to distinguish between those who fight or take refuge." Now the hillsides were posted with the guardsmen and old folks with oak levers with which to roll down rocks, in addition to the guerrillas,

As was expected a large enemy force swarmed in. In order to probe our ambush, the enemy troops, with scouts ahead, forced their way up to the entrance, in the grip of fear, and set fire to the cottages near the road.

The log cabins were instantly enveloped in flames and heavy smoke filled the valley. Believing that the guerrillas had pulled back because there was no response, the enemy troops arbitrarily closed in up to our positions.

When they were within range, our forces began powerful cross firing. The confused enemy troops drew back helterskelter leaving many of their dead. But things did not go as in the former clash. The enemy officers drew sabres and barked, when the soldiers formed into two groups and began to climb up the mountainsides.

Giving the enemy no breathing spell, the guerrillas and guardsmen kept firing. Each time the enemy forces crawled up, they suffered massive losses until their dead bodies covered the hillsides. In the end, the enemy on the right drew back. Yet, those on the left resisted desperately, firing hand-granade throwers from behind the corpses.

The great leader who had been studying the battle quickly transferred the main force atop the mountain northeast of Yaoyinggou, leaving some guerrillas behind.

Ignorant of this, the enemy mounted a general offensive, concentrating firing on the left hillside where our decoy party was located.

When the enemy became desperate, the decoy party allured them deep into the valley where our main force had ranged itself.

The enemy fell victim again to our strong cross firing. Yet they did not withdraw but closed in. When our forces drew back after good firing, the enemy again swarmed in, regardless of their losses. Though the enemy

made scores of sorties that day, they got nothing but corpses. The battle that had started in the morning ended at dusk.

The two-day long battle in defence of Yaoyinggou under the command of the great leader ended in our shining victory.

This victory exceedingly heightened the morale of the guerrillas and the people in the guerrilla zone and convinced them that when they were directed by him they were fully able to defeat the Japanese imperialist aggressor forces.

A grand meeting in celebration of this first victory was held in the Yaoyinggou guerrilla zone. The representatives of the revolutionary organizations in Dawangqing and Xiaowangqing as well as Xiaobeigou and Dabeigou and other nearby places attended it to hail the victory and learn the experience gained in the battle.

At the celebration meeting the great leader said that the attack of Japanese imperialist garrison stationed in Daxinggou was but the first "punitive operation" and that a full-scale one was expected in the future. And he called on the entire people in the zone to join efforts with the AJPGA to convert the zone into an impregnable fortress and prepare themselves firmly to take up arms in defence of the zone.

He returned to Xiaowangqing and ordered the guerrilla zones to make full preparations to beat back the possible "spring offensives" of the enemy. Touring about the guerrilla zones, he had defensive measures taken and encouraged the guerrillas and people to fight dauntlessly.

It was in the early spring of 1933 that the great leader visited Xiaobeigou.

Upon the happy news of his visit, I(O Jin U) who had been engaged in the YCLK work there rushed to the playground of Xiaobeigou School where many people were listening to his speech.

He was dwelling on arming all the people and fortifying the guerrilla zone.

The respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung said:

"We should defend the guerrilla zone thoroughly against the invasion of the Japanese imperialists. This needs, above all, an armed force capable of frustrating their offensives and giving them a powerful blow. It goes without saying that our guerrilla zones are geographically favourable for defence and disadvantageous to the enemy's offensives. Even though all these conditions

are there, however, we can neither hold out in the guerrilla zone even a moment nor can preserve a revolutionary force, if we have no armed force to defend it securely.

"In order to make the guerrilla bases, or liberated areas impregnable, we must rapidly expand and strengthen the AJPGA and arm all the people in the guerrilla zones. Of course, it is true that we have no arsenal of our own and lack cadres, and many other obstacles and difficulties stand in our way. But if the masses of the people clearly understand the aim of their struggle—the liberation of the country—and pool their efforts as one, they can overcome any hardship. If all of us, from the young members of the Children's Corps to the old people, are fully armed, we can repulse the 'punitive forces' when they attack the guerrilla zones and promptly frustrate their espionage and sabotage activities. Once all the people are armed, they can drive away any enemy."

He stressed that what was basic in the all-people defence system in the guerrilla zones was to weld the AJPGA at the core with the combat strength of the paramilitary organizations, such as the Red Guards and the Children's Vanguard, and noted that the paramilitary organizations which were engaged in military activities without being divorced from production were a people's armed force in form suitable to the actual conditions of the guerrilla zones.

Some areas, he noted, were hesitant in expanding the paramilitary organizations, claiming that only "pure elements" should be enlisted in them. This tendency came from the misunderstanding of the nature of these organizations and the policy for arming the entire people.

As a matter of fact, in the past the sectarian-flunkeys and "Leftist" opportunists who had crept into the revolutionary ranks threw covert and overt obstruction in the work for placing the people in the guerrilla zones under arms. They advanced openly that arms should not be issued to anyone and that only the "elite" should be drawn into the paramilitary organizations.

The people in the zones were those who had lost their parents, wives and children at the hands of the Japanese imperialists and had come there through a sea of blood for determined struggle. They had shed blood and proved themselves in the struggle against the enemy. They had come over to the zones in quest of the road of struggle, narrowly surviving the

enemy's murderous barbarities after taking part in the Autumn Harvest Struggle and Spring Crisis Struggle. If not they, who else could take up arms?

Due to the indiscreet act of the sectarian-flunkeys, Red Guardsmen were few in Xiaobeigou, and their weapons were nothing more than one or two hunting guns, and daggers and spears. Numerically few, they were unable to wage a positive struggle for obtaining weapons, and their role was minor because their armaments remained as they were.

When he came back to Xiaowangqing, the great leader lost no time in taking measures for reorganizing the Red Guards into the Anti-Japanese Self-Defence Corps (AJSDC), thereby providing opportunities for growth in the ranks of the paramilitary organizations.

As a result, the work for reorganizing the Red Guards which had been the kernel in the paramilitary organizations, into the AJSDC was done in all guerrilla zones, and all the fine men and women between the ages of 18 and 40 were recruited in it.

Not long after this, the AJSDC formed a company in Wangqing District No. 1, two in No. 2, three in No. 4 and one in No. 5, and these companies positively fought to capture weapons and strengthen their armaments. The expansion of the AJSDC and its heightened role led to the growth of the AJPGA. It was because fine members of the AJSDC were regularly recommended for the AJPGA, the paramilitary organization being a reservoir for the guerrilla army. It was a fruition of the organic combination of the army and the paramilitary organization.

There were a company of the AJPGA and the AJSDC in each of the revolutionary organization zones. The company was the basic unit of struggle for the defence of guerrilla zone.

The great leader even directed his profound attention to the strengthening of the companies and did not hesitate to go a long way to visit the companies.

In 1933 alone he called at the Second Wangqing Company stationed in Setjjae Island, Dawangqing, as many as scores of times. Comrade Choe Chun Guk was its political instructor.

Each time he went there, he shared board and room with the guerrillas, guiding their political studies and watching their military drill. He perseveringly taught the company commander and political instructor

to get their unit firmly prepared politically, ideologically, and in military technique, and without sleeping at night he checked up the projects for drill and political studies. Since rank-and-file soldiers as well as the company officers were peasants in the past, few had received primary education to say nothing of military training.

In order to increase the combat efficiency of the Second Company and enable it to acquire the rudiments of guerrilla warfare the great leader steeled it in action.

One day an enemy transport convoy was on the move along the Wangqing-Hunchun road. Informed of this, he quickly deployed the company and laid an ambush. He gave minute direction and warnings about its operation from the commanders' organization of the engagement to the movements of rank-and-file guerrillas.

The well-known "Story about a Rifle Butt" took place when the company was on its way home from the encounter.

It was over 20 kilometres from Setjjae Island to the scene of action. The guerrillas were returning dogtired.

It was more than 40 kilometres there and back. In addition, the guerrillas had no food and the night was far gone. Laden with booty they dragged themselves.

When she was crossing the stepping-stones half asleep, holding the knapsack of her messmate in front, a woman guerrilla slipped into the water, and her rifle butt broke. It was a serious blunder as her weapon had been exchanged for another's life.

The company commander rebuked her, saying that she was unqualified to be a guerrilla. The woman guerrilla regretted the reproof. She thought it too sharp, because what happened was not deliberate but out of fatigue. Downcast, she was walking behind the ranks.

Having learned it, the General went over to her, and walking with her he corrected her misunderstanding with kind words:

"...We should fight off the sleep, shouldn't we? If a revolutionary failed to do so, can you sympathize with his shameless act? You should not take to heart the company commander's reproof. He too was worried about your rifle. You can ease his ruffled temper if you repair the broken butt."

At his kind advice the woman guerrilla repented for having voiced rash sentiment and excitement instead of reflecting deeply on her fault.

Back at the camp she tried to repair the rifle butt. But she was too exhausted by the action and the march that she fell asleep despite herself.

When she awoke the next morning, she found her broken rifle in its original shape.

With her eyes wide open, she looked at the weapon. It seemed really a dream. To her surprise, the weapon had been repaired very well. The officer on duty came over to her and said:

"Last night Comrade Commander mended it in person. When he finished it, he said that the weapon should not look ugly for it belonged to a woman member, and gave it repeated touches lest any trace should be left of the damage. And he worked with it virtually sitting up right through the night."

She burst into sobs hugging the delicately repaired weapon which carried a warm affection of the great Commander.

After he exercised a deep love and care on all the members of the company from the commander to the soldier so that they should all be qualified both politically and militarily as combatants of a revolutionary army, the great leader set out on a long journey to visit another company.

Staying for several days in the first company in Sishuizifang, he bound notebooks in person for the guerrillas who could not write their names, and guided their studies.

He also called on the AJSDC and other paramilitary organizations and gave scrupulous guidance in increasing their combat power.

In an AJSDC company defending the road at the foot of Mt. Bbyojok, the gateway to the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone, he designed the barrack which was structurally convenient for prompt counterattack under all circumstances.

When he met the Children's Vanguard in Macun, he admired them for the efficient pistol they had manufactured and made specific arrangements so that they could join the AJSDC in attacking the "defence corps" in Shangjingli and Dakanzi.

On another day he met the members of the Women's Association in Macun to review their combat preparedness. During his conversation with them, he found that though they had some knowledge of weapons, they were not confident because they had not practised shooting. Therefore he

said that they should be accustomed to firing and proposed that a firing range be set up.

The Association members walked on air, and boldly asked: "Dear General, are there enough bullets?"

Smiling, he replied:

"The bullets are in short supply. Yet you ought to do shooting practice. If not, you will get embarrassed in battle and waste more ammunition. Excellent marksmanship saves bullets."

He got a firing range organized in front of the barracks of the AJPGA. More than ten members of the Women's Association were picked up for the first round of practice.

Before the practice, he made them dismantle and assemble the rifles and take the pose for shooting. The Association members were all dexterous, because of their hard daily training.

The great leader was satisfied with their dexterity, and specifically taught the points they should observe in shooting.

The practice began. Each member went forward and took the position. Correcting her posture, he told: **"You should look on the target not as a dummy but as a 'punitive trooper' of Japanese imperialism who had murdered your parents, brothers and sisters and villagers."** And he shouted the order to fire.

Bearing his earnest teaching in mind the women took sight and pulled the trigger, as if aiming at the chest of the enemy.

Each time firing was over, a signaller waved a red flag meaning a direct hit. All the shots told.

Each of the Association members fired five shots, and her result was excellent.

Under his wise leadership, the policy of arming the entire population to defend the guerrilla zones was being put into effect with success.

The biggest snag in this work was the shortage of weapons.

In order to solve this problem the great leader made the AJPGA and the AJSDC conduct incessant raids to capture weapons from the enemy. At the same time, he saw that a gunsmith shop was established in each guerrilla zone to repair and make weapons by their own efforts.

At these shops, hand-grenades were manufactured, bullets made of

empty shells and damaged rifles and broken parts of machine-guns were repaired.

The well-known "Yongil Bomb" that terrified the enemy was a kind of hand-grenade invented by the great leader himself. It was conveniently portable and highly efficient so that it was used not only in battles but also on lookout duty.

After the invention of this bomb, a special hand-grenade unit was organized in the guerrilla army. This unit destroyed enemy's forts, barracks and defence installations, and its role was tremendous since weapons were in short supply.

Not only this unit but also all guerrillas carried hand-grenades, and each of the Women's Association members had one or two hand-grenades with her. The "Yongil Bomb" was one of the most favourite weapons of the people in the guerrilla zones, who were all equipped with the bombs in case of an emergency.

The great leader guided the fortification of the guerrilla zones along with the arming of the entire people.

He proposed that observation posts be set up atop the high mountains in the zone to have a strict watch over the movements of the invading enemy and that obstacles be laid out where the enemy may possibly come so as to obstruct his manoeuvrability. Pointing out that trenches should be dug deep and strong, and barracks built by taking different unexpected conditions into account, he said that since the guerrilla zones were geographically favourable and had dense forests and many rocks and stones, we were fully able to make impregnable defence installations, if we strive to do.

The respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung said:

"Full combat preparations have to be made in anticipation of the enemy's large-scale 'punitive operations'. Deeper trenches must be dug, more stones gathered and the surveillance and sentry network be made more elaborate. A good system of mobilization should be established so that all the people in the guerrilla zone can quickly man their respective posts when the enemy attacks."

The work for fortifying all the guerrilla zones was carried out energetically. In Dawangqing additional lookout posts were set up on the tops of high mountains in Xidapo and the hill near the village where there

was a school, and other places, and the mobilization system reshaped. It was under this system that, when informed of the enemy's appearance by the lookout post atop the high mountain in Dakanzi, the observation post in the school village should report it to the Children's Corps School whose instructor ought to send school children on liaison mission to the chiefs of the Party and YCLK organizations and all houses. All the people preserved in their knapsacks daily necessities for emergency use, such as rice, salt, matches, shoes and pine resin so that they could get along in mountains even at the time of the prolonged enemy "punitive operations". In Xiaowangqing, trenches and pillboxes were built in Bbyojok and Kal mountains and at other key points, and dugouts were made to ward off the enemy's shelling. Booby traps were made and obstacles laid in the major bends of a single route for enemy attack, and stones heaped on cliffs.

The work for fortified guerrilla zone went on briskly in Dahuangwai, Yaoyinggou and Gayahe, and a communication network for prompt report of the movement of the enemy's "punitive forces" to the guerrilla zones was established by the underground organizations active in Luozigou, Shizhai, Liangshuiquanzi and other semi-guerrilla zones.

The guerrilla zones became fully ready to counter the enemy's "punitive operations" and hit them back.

As a result of the establishment of a strong all-people's defence system under the wise guidance of the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung, the guerrilla zones became impregnable enough to keep off any enemy attack.

While giving dynamic guidance to the work of establishing an all-people's defence system in each guerrilla zone along the Tuman River, he organized big and small surprise attacks on the enemy one after another to capture large quantities of weapons. This helped to improve the armaments of the AJPGA and the AJSDC and increase their combat power.

Quite a few members of the AJPGA, to say nothing of the AJSDC members, lacked battle experience and were ignorant of the norms of action in battlefields, and even the commanders did not master the rudiments of guerrilla warfare.

When the enemy was making desperate preparations for large-scale spring "punitive operations", he organized and commanded battles in Jiapigou, Shangjingli, Liangshuiquanzi and many other places to aug-

ment the armaments of the guerrillas and the AJSDC in Xiaowangqing district and teach them guerrilla tactics.

As a newly-recruited guerrilla, I (O Baek Ryong) took part in the Jiapigou Battle organized and commanded by him and learned the shrewd ambush tactics for the first time.

Jiapigou is a mountain village some 16 kilometres away from the northeast of Wangqing. It is surrounded by a thick forest.

The enemy in Daduchuan herded out the people for carting timber. For fear of guerrilla attack the transport convoy was escorted by many armed personnel.

Having worked out a plan to snatch away their weapons, the great leader summoned our company.

It was toward the end of March of the same year. At night our company under his command left for Jiapigou.

Walking side by side with us he explained the characteristics of ambush operation. Saying that it was a form of action to attack the moving enemy, he noted that if a surprise attack was mounted from a favourable position, even a powerful enemy could not show its combat capacity to the full, and stressed that what was important in this action was stealth and surprise.

We quickened our steps as we visualized the enemy's miserable defeat under his command, and my heart stirred up because I was planning to replace my old-type weapon with a new one.

When we arrived at the valley in Jiapigou, he deployed his men. Two platoons lay in ambush in the waist of the mountain north of the road and one platoon in the mountain waist in the south. And one squad was sent out for defence in the direction of Wangqing.

When day broke, the terrain revealed itself. Our position overlooked a narrow cart track along a gorge between steep mountains. It was apparent to me, a novice, that once they came in, the enemy would certainly be wiped out.

Soon, a long procession of more than 70 horse-drawn carts came along rumbling with the enemy's armed defence corps members at its heels.

When he reached 20 metres off my position the boss of the corps mounted a rock and bragged:

"If communists turn up I'll finish them off!" and urged his men to quicken their steps.

It was just at this time that the great leader signalled for firing. I who had been taking aim at the boss with bated breath pulled the trigger. The boss who was about to come down from the rock crumbled to the ground, his hands waving in the air.

At our sudden firing, the enemy were thrown into muddle and annihilated.

As the great leader had expected, in face of our surprise attack, the enemy forces were wiped out, before they could even point their weapons, with our old-type rifles and hunting guns.

In this battle we captured all the Model 38 rifles from the enemy and large quantities of ammunition which augmented our supplies.

Afterwards the great leader organized an attack on Liangshuiquanzi to wipe out the Japanese imperialist police and secure large quantities of military supplies, and led the raid on Shangjingli to thwart the enemy's attempt to establish a military base near the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone.

In these active operations we not only learned about his superb guerrilla tactics and military methods but were also moved with admiration at his warm love for the people, and strove hard to imitate his lofty virtues.

He would make sure that daily necessities for the people in the zone and other goods for old people and children were first set apart from the booty, and wanted them to have more and better items for primary needs.

He was also deeply solicitous for the people residing in the enemy-held areas. When he happened to stay in a village he would sit down with people to ease their mental sufferings under the enemy's tyranny and teach them the way to worthy life, and tried to give the greatest possible help to the poor people.

One day early in April of 1933, our unit was resting in front of a peasant's house near Liangshuiquanzi. Evidently there were signs of life in the house. So we knocked at the door, but no one answered.

It was hard for us to have a rest outside in the cold after a long tiring march. We became more embarrassed with our wounded man.

The great leader came over to us and said: "Doing some exercise is better than sitting about doing nothing in the cold." Then he picked up an

axe and started chopping wood piled up in the courtyard.

We all followed suit: Some swept the yard, others fetched water and built fire to start cooking.

At first the old couple in the house hid inside in fear, taking the guerrillas for Jap soldiers. But when they saw what was going on outside they were deeply moved. They had never seen such soldiers. So they came out and invited us in, apologizing for their misunderstanding.

Calling the old man grandfather out of respect, the great leader was deeply concerned about his poor life with not even chicken to raise.

When the old man said that it was his fate to be poor, the great leader told him that the peasants were poor because of Japanese imperialism, reactionary bureaucrats and landlords. Before leaving, he gave the old man some money to help him ease his hard life.

When he learned that it was the respected General Kim Il Sung, looked up to and followed by the entire nation, who had taken such care of his family, the old man was moved to tears, and said, holding the General's sleeve, "You are a great man, yet chopped our firewood.... You, the Commander, did such a thing...."

The respected leader smiled, and said: **"The Commander is also a son of the people. There is no reason why I shouldn't do things that others do."**

These words greatly moved both the old man and us.

"The Commander is also a son of the people,"— these were the impressive remarks which showed the loftiest quality of the great leader who is most modest and simple and respects and loves the labouring people any time and anywhere.

Another time, he had advanced with 70-80 men to an enemy-controlled area.

After resting the unit in the mountain near a village, he came down with a guerrilla toward evening to find out the real conditions there.

Wearing peasant's clothes, he went first to a magnificent tile-roofed house, and asked his man to call out the master.

At first no one answered. When he knocked a second time, the master, a landlord, came out. When asked to be allowed to stay overnight, the landlord retorted: "Why are you seeking favour here since there is an inn some two kilometres off?", and disappeared inside.

Then the great leader went to a humble thatched house and made his man call the master. It was supper time. At the first call the master opened the door and ushered them in. Saying that there was a room to spare, he kindly invited them to share barley porridge. He was very sorry that the gruel was the only food he could offer the guests.

This graphically illustrates the contrasting nature of the working people and the rich.

The great leader told his men to learn from the toiling people's beautiful and pure minds and bitterly hate the landlords and capitalists.

On his order the unit came down the hill into the village some time later. We could see the landlord's ugly nature once again.

When the guerrillas entered the village wearing uniforms and shouldering rifles, the landlord who had been so inhospitable to us was the first to welcome them in a flattering manner and invited the commander to his house.

By making the commander stay in his house and sending the guerrillas to others' the landlord schemed to spend his own things as little as possible.

The great leader told the company commander Han Hung Gwon to make the landlord pay heavily, because he was a wicked person and cook meals with the landlord's rice for the guerrillas in other peasants' houses, too.

The company commander planned to give the landlord beans, as was told by the leader.

With some guerrillas the company commander went to the landlord's, pretending to accept his invitation willingly. Threatening that they would stay on for months as the landlord was well off, the company commander made him give lots of rice and pork to the peasants' houses where the guerrillas were billeted.

When his rice bins were being emptied, the landlord grumbled that there were grains in others' houses, too. The company commander retorted: "For the independence of Korea, you ought to stand a treat for us now. If we consume the rice of the poor peasants, what should they subsist on to do farming?" Without heeding the landlord's complaints, he got more rice and pigs taken out and brought out even reed mats and beddings.

The landlord did not dare to resist and handed over what was demanded.

Though it was humorous, it intensified our hatred for the wicked nature of the rich.

The shining victory won in the attacks under the command of the great leader inspired the guerrilla units in the Tuman River zones to mount active military operations. Every day witnessed daring military actions giving the enemy staggering blows, such as attack on the Self-defence Corps near Xiaoyanjigang, the Jiqingling Battle, and ambushes in Hailangou and on the Helong-Tushanzi road. These battles helped to quickly strengthen the guerrilla units which were still weak in arms and lacked experience in actual battle militarily and politically, and prepared them fully to counter the enemy's large-scale "punitive operations".

On April 17 that year, the Japanese imperialists rushed more than 1,500 "crack" troops with the Wangqing garrison as the core to Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone where the headquarters of the Korean revolution was located.

The great leader summoned the guerrilla officers and the commanding personnel of the paramilitary organizations to the headquarters and placed before them the operational policy against the enemy's attack.

Having expected that the enemy would come in along the route in front of Mt. Bbyojok and from the direction of Dawangqing, he ordered them to annihilate the enemy troops in Mt. Bbyojok gorge and at the entrance to the Dawangqing valley. He also said that since the enemy had long prepared for "punitive operations" they would not pull back readily, but attempt at roundabout attack and encircling operation in case they failed in frontal attack and that, therefore, the lookout posts had to keep a strict watch even over the places where no encounter was expected.

His anticipation proved correct in the course of the entire operation.

As he had foreseen, the enemy attack started from Mt. Bbyojok line.

The gorge of Mt. Bbyojok is the entrance to the narrow and deep Xiaowangqing valley. A single track runs between the mountains flanking it. The guerrillas and AJSDC men took their positions on both sides of the gorge. When the forward columns of the enemy forces came deep into ambush, they met a hail of bullets and rocks.

The cliff seemed crumbling down.

The enemy troops swarmed to and fro like a pack of wild boars and were wiped out piecemeal without having fired a shot.

Having sustained tremendous losses at first the enemy hurriedly regrouped his unit and launched an attack at the mountain. The mountain, however, was so steep that even wild beasts could hardly move about, and no step forward was allowed in face of our bullets and shower of stones.

The enemy tried to climb up for more than two hours, but failed, and retreated with heavy casualties.

The mountains in the zone rang with drumbeats of victory and songs of the Children's Corps members.

At the meeting of commanding officers held that night the great leader reviewed the first battle and gave them detailed instructions to make thorough combat preparations for the ensuing day.

On the following day, the enemy, changing tactics, attempted to attack us from three sides—from Mt. Bbyojok line in front of us as before, Mt. Mapan in Dawangqing in our flank and Jiapigou at the back.

The offensive started from Mt. Bbyojok line. Unlike in the previous operation, the enemy advanced some of his force. Pretending to fight a confused battle the enemy was intent on keeping our main force where it was until his remaining unit appeared in our flank by a detour.

The great leader who had been in the commanding post on Hill 715 took in the enemy's intention and proposed a new tactics. He said:

"We must not be deceived by the enemy's tactics. We should fight where we want, not where the enemy wants to do so. Therefore, we must closely observe the enemy's movement, and drag him about, moving flexibly, and deal him a decisive blow at a favourable point. This is the way we take the initiative in battle."

His flexible tactics threw the enemy again into a trap of death.

Our unit on Mt. Bbyojok line blunted the point of the enemy's attack by a powerful blow and slipped away into a thick forest to lie in ambush and wipe out the detouring enemy force.

Though the enemy could easily "seize" our position on Mt. Bbyojok line, the troops which had come by roundabout way were annihilated in an instant.

Having occupied the vacant Mt. Bbyojok, the enemy's main force

rushed to Macun in high spirits, with four trucks in the lead.

In no time they came to a halt. As the front truck was stopped by the roadblock set up by the Children's Vanguard and the vehicles behind halted abruptly, the guerrillas dealt the confused enemy troops a staggering blow.

Having belatedly found his situation worsened the enemy called in planes to drop bombs. The Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone was engulfed in flames and smoke, and verdant forests were set to fire.

The more desperate the enemy became, the more fearlessly the guerrillas and people in the zone fought a do-or-die battle, with burning hatred and the conviction of victory. The old people, women and children did not want to seek shelter or safety.

The Women's Association members shinned up craggy cliffs through a hail of bullets to bring food in time to those engaged in a hard battle.

Saying: "General Kim's tactics is excellent. In the past the KIA left this place without daring to fight even a battle. Yet, he transforms every gorge into a pit. Nature acknowledges a famous General," the old men who had once been in the KIA shot at the enemy with captured weapons.

The Children's Corps members, too, fought valiantly. They carried ammunition and hand-grenades to the battlefield. They stealthily closed in on the enemy's convoys, threatening and confusing them by firing the pistols of their own make and blowing signal bugles.

Despite their successive setbacks, the enemy troops launched attacks three times to capture Hill 715 where our commanding post was located. Yet, each time they were beaten back.

When dusk fell, the enemy stopped his offensive and withdrew to Dafangzi near Macun and made preparations for camping.

Saying that no respite should be given to the enemy, the great leader dispatched a storming party.

The night storming proved greatly effective. The attacking force consisted of only 4-5 men, but as it was dark nobody could judge its numerical strength, thus throwing the enemy into consternation. In the melee the enemy troops killed each other, more than what the guerrillas shot dead. The survivors fired aimlessly in terror all through night. The attack terrified and exhausted the enemy infinitely.

The third day's battle was more inspiring.

The "punitive force" from the direction of Dawangqing was lured into an ambush, and the enemy at the back—Jiapigou—arrived at Macun only on the third day, as they had been hanging about in the forests.

The enemy force, which had been terror-stricken by the successive setbacks in the Mt. Bbyojok-Macun area, started firing at the troops from Jiapigou, taking them for the guerrillas. The latter, too, hurriedly fired back with machine-guns. Both fought hard for more than two hours, each taking a heavy toll of the other.

When the two enemy forces held their fire and regrouped themselves, fighting their own kind, the great leader who had been watching this from the mountain ordered a volley. The enemy units were caught in a hail of bullets and given an annihilating blow.

The enemy began to retreat helter-skelter. It had taken him two days to fight his way into the Xiaowangqing valley, leaving corpses behind. Now they sounded retreat only in one hour.

Gun reports subsided in the valley and the guerrillas and people returned home from the mountains. They were blackened with powder smoke and their clothes were torn. But their faces beamed with the joy and pride of victory.

When we set out to rebuild our houses which the enemy had burned down, we again found out what a telling blow the victorious battle in defence of Xiaowangqing had dealt to the enemy and how fully it demonstrated the heroism of our people. A comrade who was gathering firewood found an enemy's "letter" on a tree branch, which read as follows:

"Korean guerrillas!... Come down from the mountain and fight us here in the plain! If we are defeated, we will return to Japan, and if you lose, strike your flag...."

The note set the guerrillas and people into a fit of laughter. No one could read it without laughing. Yet, the note told a truth which could not be laughed off.

It was indicative of the admission of their crushing setback, notably their tactical defeat. The enemy had thrown in regular armed forces 1,500 strong, whereas our forces were two companies of guerrillas and the AJSDC of similar size, plus the people who had helped the former.

The battle, however, ended in a heavy defeat for the 1,500-strong regular army.

The victorious Xiaowangqing defensive battle is a landmark in the history of our people's anti-Japanese national-liberation struggle.

Never before in the 20-odd years after the national ruin had our people won such a signal victory over a large armed force of Japanese imperialism.

In particular, the victory scored in this place which had been drenched in blood in the "large-scale punitive operations" of 1920 gave the people great excitement and national pride, and evoked infinite gratitude and reverence for the great leader who had crowned this historic battle with victory.

The victory was a brilliant triumph of the superb guerrilla tactics created by the respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung, and of the all-people's defence system established by him.

This original guerrilla tactics and all-people's defence system demonstrated its invincibility not only in the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone but in all other zones along the Tuman River which the enemy had attacked.

The enemy's "large-scale punitive operations" in Xiaowangqing in the spring of that year synchronized with the similar operations in Shirengou, Wangougou, Sandaowan and Fuyandong in Yanji County, Yantonglazi in Hunchun County, Yulangcun in Helong County and other Tuman River guerrilla zones. But none of these zones was stamped out, and the enemy sustained irretrievable setbacks in all places he attacked.

In each of the guerrilla zones there was only a one company-size guerrilla force or the AJSDC.

Battered and bruised in the "spring punitive operations" the enemy deplored:

"Everything in the red zones—mountains and rivers, grass and trees, looks like guerrillas."

It revealed their morbid dread of the guerrilla zone, an impregnable fortress with the entire people under arms.

2. HOLDING ALOFT THE BANNER OF ANTI-JAPANESE ALLIED FRONT

(1) LUOZIGOU NEGOTIATIONS

In the difficult days of fierce battles in defence of guerrilla zones the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung strove hard to consolidate the united front with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units.

Following his negotiations with Commander Wei, the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units in different parts of east Manchuria had taken joint action with us. Yet in the spring of 1933 they suddenly changed their attitude which gave rise to complex incidents: They raided Korean settlements, outraged Korean peasants and murdered the travelling guerrillas. All this took place in an unbroken chain.

This brought about a deadlock in the joint united front which had made considerable progress since the great leader's negotiations with Commander Wei and through the special detachments and the work of the anti-Japanese soldiers committee.

There was a reason for this revived antagonism to the Korean communists.

It was accounted for, above all, by the intensified military offensives of Japanese imperialism and its more vicious and crafty machinations to foment national estrangement.

Frightened by the heightened prestige and increased militancy of the Korean communists who had established guerrilla zones over vast areas along the Tuman River and consequent expansion of the joint action between the AJPGA and the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, the enemy tried hard to destroy their united front and smash them one by one.

While mounting frenzied "punitive operations", the enemy resorted to every conceivable trick and intrigue to conciliate the politically-

backward Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units. They spread the rumours: "The Koreans are going to seize Jiandao", "The Communist Party kills people at random", and "The Korean communists are politically the enemy of the National Salvation Army". On the other hand they lured the officers and soldiers of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units to submit, which, they claimed, "would lead to a way out and generous treatment".

In face of Japanese imperialism's military offensives and cunning appeasement and deceptive tricks, the National Salvation Army units and mountain rebels wavered, and many of them were either disorganized or gave in.

Still worse, the crimes of the "Leftist" opportunists and the sectarian-flunkeys worsened the situation. Distorting the great leader's line of anti-Japanese allied front they clamoured that the communists could not take joint action with the National Salvation Army, because it was an army representing the propertied class and that since the National Salvation Army soldiers had turned into local rebels, if we formed an allied front with them, the people would look on us in the same light. They went so far as to commit the rash act of seizing the property of the Chinese, clamouring about the "Soviet", "Proletarian revolution" and what not. They were very harsh toward the Chinese who were fighting in the revolutionary ranks.

In the autumn of 1932 a Korean named Kim Myong San and six Chinese soldiers went over to our unit from the enemy's "Self-defence Corps".

Once in the guerrilla zone they were now zealous in the revolutionary work.

The narrow-minded "Leftist" opportunists and sectarian-flunkeys did not treat them warmly but were secretly suspicious of and unfriendly toward them.

For example, one day returning from his reconnaissance mission in an enemy-held area, a Chinese member ate something in a restaurant, but did not pay because he had no money. A factionalist who was in charge of the military affairs section of the Wangqing county Party organization shot him dead, instead of admonishing and educating him.

Shaken with terror, the other Chinese soldiers fled that night to

Guan's unit of the National Salvation Army stationed near Macun.

Prostrating themselves before Commander Guan they said in a tearful voice: "The Korean communists kill the Chinese for no reason."

All the officers and soldiers of Guan's unit, to say nothing of its commander, flew into a rage and arrested and shot to death four Korean communists including its chief of staff Kim Un Sik.

Saying that preparations should be made against a possible attack from the guerrillas, Commander Guan ordered trenches to be dug around the barracks overnight and all the travelling Koreans to be arrested.

The incident did not stop at that.

The criminal act committed by the sectarian-flunkey was taken for the organized act of Korean communists and became known to all the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, big and small.

As a result, at all the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, Korean communists were apprehended and murdered indiscriminately, and Korean settlements were attacked and property looted.

The Tongshanhao-led unit perpetrated the outrage of arresting and massacring the members of the Li Gwang-led special detachment.

At that time, this detachment was active near Mt. Laohei, entrusted with the task of working with the Chinese units. It had to meet the National Salvation Army units and the mountain rebels almost every day. In this confused situation it had to run the gauntlet at every step.

Comrade Li Gwang, however, had been resolved to unhesitatingly risk his life to carry out the revolutionary task assigned to him by the great leader.

He had not hesitated to visit the units of the National Salvation Army, meet their bosses and talk to the anti-Japanese soldiers. In this course he and his men had been arrested and massacred by the treacherous Tongshanhao-led unit.

Serious were the consequences of the vicious Japanese imperialist policy of playing on national differences and the reckless activities of the sectarian-flunkeys.

All this posed as a most pressing task to hold in check the rash acts of the Chinese anti-Japanese units and induce them to bring about a joint united front. If this were not done it would possibly result in alienating tens of thousands of anti-Japanese soldiers.

When such ominous events took place incessantly in relations with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, the great leader would lose himself deep in thought, without going to bed at night.

The lights were on till late at night in the headquarters cabin in Macun, Xiaowangqing.

In May 1933 the great leader called a meeting of chiefs of the revolutionary organizations and guerrilla commanders in all counties in order to chalk out new measures for the formation of an allied front with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units.

Those present at the meeting looked strained. Some people entertained apprehensions about the possibility of forming an allied front with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, since they continued to cause troubles and fired at the Korean communists indiscriminately, and others maintained that we should retaliate, hardly able to hold back their sorrow and indignation at the loss of their comrades. Some others doubted if it was possible for us, communists, to realize an allied front with the National Salvation Army, an army of landlords and bureaucrats, or avoid a split with them.

Seeing that most of the participants in the meeting were not confident in the work with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, the great leader made clear once again the fundamental approaches of the Korean communists to the anti-Japanese allied front and gave a detailed account of the principled problems arising in this respect. He said:

"The policy of an anti-Japanese allied front is a basic strategy of the Korean communists for securing the superiority of revolutionary forces over the counterrevolutionary forces.

"Though the hard-headed bosses of the National Salvation Army units and the mountain rebels still maintaining their bandit traits, are backward and have many limitations, we ought to patiently draw them into an anti-Japanese allied front insomuch as they are opposed to Japan.

"Needless to say, we are greatly pained by the cruel massacre of our dear revolutionary comrades at their hands. However, since the rash acts of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units are due to their political backwardness, we, communists, should not answer them with similar acts but awaken, enlist and lead them with perseverance and generosity. This is the way for safeguarding the fundamental interests of the revolution."

He bitterly criticized some people's "Leftist" tendency to blindly insisting on rank-and-file unity in the work with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, while rejecting the unity at the leadership level, and taught that such a method would fail to achieve unity at the rank-and-file level also.

He emphasized that it was necessary to lay the main stress on unity at the rank-and-file level, and for this, we should work amicably with the leadership and bear in mind the stark reality that the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units are entirely under the control of their bosses.

He further stated:

"Since the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units are under the grip of their commanders and the rank-and-file soldiers look on them as their superiors, to do work with the latter only is unrealistic, and it is a narrow-minded and stupid act to push the commanders of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units onto the side of the enemy, by overemphasizing their vacillation without seeing their anti-imperialist stand. Now that the present troubles are being caused chiefly by the leadership of these units, it is impossible to straighten out the situation unless we carry out our work with them."

The Korean communists, he stressed, should form a total allied front with all the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units. In order to save the delicate situation it was imperative to work with the high-ranking officers who are in complete command of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, and the best way was to have direct negotiations with them.

His teachings refreshed the participants in the meeting.

He was wise enough to probe into the nature of the complex situation and indicate clear-cut ways for overcoming it.

The participants, however, were not relieved of their forebodings. They were still apprehensive of how these commanders would receive their delegates, because they had levelled their guns indiscriminately at the Korean communists and murdered comrades Kim Un Sik, Li Gwang and many other communists of Korea.

To their surprise the great leader expressed his readiness to visit them personally for negotiation.

Their astonishment was beyond description.

Needless to say, everybody was well aware that no one but he was

politically able and magnanimous enough to meet the arrogant and ignorant commanders of the National Salvation Army and persuade them to form a united front, when the relations with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units were most precarious.

Yet, he must not be allowed for negotiations.

Those present at the meeting asked him to reconsider this problem, thinking that they would commit an unforgettable crime against the Korean revolution if they failed to dissuade him from this dangerous attempt, because he was carrying the destiny of the Korean revolution and the aspirations of the whole nation on his shoulders.

But he did not swerve from his determination.

Around that time two of the comrades who had been engaged in the YCLK activities under his instructions and guidance ever since in Jilin were operating in the Wu Yicheng-led unit as its secretary and chief of the staff. They had tried to win over Wu Yicheng and other high-ranking officers, who, however, were too obstinate to be persuaded. Nonetheless Wu Yicheng had to be shaken at any cost in order to win over other Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units. So they had reported on this score.

The respected leader told them:

"To improve our relations with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units is a very important question having a bearing on the future of the revolution and is quite feasible. Needless to say, this work is difficult, complex and, at the same time, dangerous, because they are politically backward and are committing reckless acts, duped by the Japanese imperialist policy of alienation. Our work with them, however, is a revolutionary task which can and must be carried out. If we back out, because of difficulties, we are not behaving like true revolutionaries."

Each time a difficult and arduous task was raised he used to take it on himself, while guiding the Korean revolution as a whole. He was a paragon of real communist revolutionaries. The participants in the meeting could not say anything more, deeply moved by his lofty revolutionary determination to defy all dangers for the sake of the revolution.

Right after the meeting, the great leader made preparations to set out

for negotiations with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit in Luozigou.

Luozigou, Wangqing County, was the stronghold of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units. With his headquarters there, Wu Yicheng, frontline commander of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, was commanding the National Salvation Army including the units led by Chai Shirong and Shi Zhongheng, exercising his influence on the Qingsandui, Kaosandui and Tongshanhao-led mountain rebels.

They were based there, because it was conveniently situated, more than 120 kilometres off the seat of Wangqing County which prevented the tentacles of Japanese imperialism from reaching there, and had large tracks of fertile land which yielded plenty of grains.

The great leader was going to meet Wu Yicheng, a high-ranking commander who was most powerful and influential among the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units.

He organized a detachment to Luozigou with stout guerrillas to show the might of the AJPGA. I (O Baek Ryong) was among those attending on the great leader.

The guerrillas were in high spirits. They were elated and moved with a strong sense of pride and responsibility to be escorting him on a dangerous and difficult mission.

We were all clad in new uniforms and armed with new rifles captured in the Jiapigou Battle. It was intended to show the imposing appearance of the AJPGA to the soldiers of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units.

The great leader had notified the Wu-led unit that a delegate from the AJPGA was going to Luozigou for negotiations. Therefore, this unit did not misbehave.

As was learned later from our comrades active in the unit, Wu Yicheng, informed of the great leader's scheduled visit, said that though he had no intention of cooperating with the Korean communists, he wanted to meet the well-known Commander Kim Il Sung not to lose his face.

After all, the great leader's high authority and reputation brought the overbearing commander of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit to negotiations.

It was learned from an underground organization that streamers inscribed: "Welcome to the Korean anti-Japanese guerrillas!" were put up at the entrance to Luozigou.

At last the great leader issued an order for departure.

The guerrillas in their new uniforms and armed with new rifles left Xiaowangqing, with bugles playing a march.

Mounted on a horse he stood at the head. His horse was a white steed captured at the Zhuanjiaolou Battle. It looked whitish at one time and snow-white at the other.

Seeing him off on a white horse wearing uniform, the people in the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone wished him success in the negotiations.

With a smile on his face he waved to the people lining up in the valley.

His unit went up the valley. At dusk they reached Yangmuchuzi, the last village of the Wangqing guerrilla zone. He ordered his men to quarter there.

The village people were as happy as on a holiday to meet the great leader. The people, who had been informed beforehand, had been waiting for him and his men and gave them cordial hospitality.

We were billeted in village houses. Supper was cooked with all sincerity and an art performance put up by the Children's Corps.

Camp fire was built for the performance in a spacious ground in the heart of the village. The place was as bright as daytime.

The great leader took his seat with village elders to enjoy the performance. They were happy and, at the same time, concerned, because he was on a difficult mission. He smiled away their fears, and was the first to applaud each time an item ended.

The repertoire, including "Prides of Thirteen Provinces" and "Unity Pole" created by the great leader, was varied and won wild acclamation. It was a delightful entertainment.

On the following morning the unit started out again, amid a warm send-off.

The guerrillas became alert, for they had left the guerrilla zone. They were expected to come across the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units and the enemy as well.

It was still a long way to go to Luozigou.

The column marched all day long and reached Taipinggou, a semi-

guerrilla zone where our organization was entrenched. Atop the Taiping Pass in front of the village one could see Luozigou afar.

Order was issued to make camp, and he rounded off preparations for negotiations with Wu Yicheng, while his men were resting enjoying the hospitality of the village people. His orderly was sent to Wu Yicheng.

The orderly came back that night bringing with him a message in reply accepting the negotiations.

Prior to the departure the next day he assembled his men and said:

"We are now marching into the area under the control of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units.

"Everyone must behave in a calm and composed manner. You must not get nervous and rash, but be prudent in everything.

"If we, members of the AJPGA, behave with dignity and show lofty communist mental and moral traits, the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units will not dare act rudely.

"Since we are seeking comradely unity under all circumstances, we must be modest and kind to the officers and soldiers of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units and must be ready to explain and persuade.

"In case something unexpected takes place you must not be perplexed but tide it over with disciplined and determined action."

Bearing his instructions in mind we renewed our resolve to risk our lives to defend him, whatsoever circumstances.

The great leader left half of his men behind in Taipinggou, so that they could support the guerrillas in case something unforeseen occurred in Luozigou.

He started out with his unit, in fine array, a red flag at the front and bugles sounding.

After crossing the Taiping Pass the guerrillas stayed in a village for a brief rest. A woman came running to the great leader.

"Dear General," she called out in a choked voice, "...why go to Luozigou?!", and burst into tears, covering her face with her hands.

All of us became nonplussed at this unexpected occurrence. Having recognized her immediately, the great leader helped her up and consoled her. She was the widow of Comrade Li Gwang, who had been cruelly killed by the Tongshanhao-led unit. She was living in this village, and having heard that he was bound for Luozigou to meet the commander of

the National Salvation Army, she had come out to dissuade him.

"General, Luozigou is dangerous. You shouldn't go there..." the woman implored him again. She vividly remembered how her husband had been put to a cruel death by the National Salvation Army and knew that the destiny of our people rested on the great leader's shoulders. With tears in her eyes, she supplicated him not to go to the perilous place.

Looking at her the respected leader remained speechless with pity. After a good while, he said, with a catch in his voice:

"Comrade Li Gwang...laid down his life in order to return tens of thousands of troops of the National Salvation Army to the anti-Japanese front. His noble death will never go in vain.

"We will certainly win back the National Salvation Army, come whatever may, because the revolution requires it...."

The great leader warmly consoled the sobbing woman, and ordered his men to start.

The unit resumed its march to Luozigou. As the destination drew near, many soldiers of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit were found lying in ambush along both sides of the road, with machine guns posted. Bullets would fly as soon as an order was issued from their superiors.

Despite their agreement to negotiations, no one could say when the ignorant Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit would act on impulse. Every step was risky.

The great leader, however, put on a bold face, and advanced his unit imperturbably. He did not cast a single glance at the ambush.

Encouraged by his perfectly cool and collected manner we marched with added vigour.

Overawed by our imposing and dignified appearance, the soldiers of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit did not so much as to stir even a blade of grass, as they watched us lying on their bellies.

At last our unit passed through the ambush, and reached the castle gate of Luozigou.

Luozigou was a mountain town surrounded by earthen walls with high fortifications in the east and the west.

Wu Yicheng's headquarters was in the northeastern part of the town, and the great leader led his unit toward it.

The town folk, animated, sent cheers, and many Chinese soldiers watched the guerrillas in wonder.

When the great leader reached the headquarters, an officer hurried out to meet him.

The great leader got off the horse, ordered his men to have a rest, and walked in with two bodyguards.

Negotiations with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit started.

At first Wu Yicheng was arrogant but cautious.

There was nothing but a round-table in the conference room.

A wooden holster slung across his shoulder, the mustachio'd Wu Yicheng wearing a grey uniform came in with a dignified bearing, followed by many adjutants. They all looked insolent and cold.

A bright smile on his face which expelled the gloomy atmosphere around, the great leader exchanged greetings with Wu in a cordial and stately manner.

Awed by his modest, yet, free and dignified behaviour, Wu offered him a seat for courtesy's sake.

After the exchange of greetings, the great leader sat down and complimented Wu and his adjutants on the save-the-nation resistance of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units. He said:

"Your country which is invaded by the Japanese imperialist brigands is in a grave crisis and your people are undergoing immeasurable sufferings. When many of the units formerly belonging to the Chinese Northeastern Army renounced the fight against Japanese imperialism, submitted and backslided, you have resolutely risen up under the banner of anti-Japanese national salvation and are fighting against the brigands of Japanese imperialism. Your struggle is a righteous one, and a fine patriotic action to save the country and the people.

"We who are struggling against Japanese imperialism, our common enemy, are really delighted with your anti-Japanese national salvation struggle and fully support it."

With a tense air Wu and his adjutants listened to his words.

After analysing the changed political and military situation after the September 18 Incident, the great leader said that the Japanese imperialists, the common enemy of the Korean and Chinese peoples, dreaded, above all, the allied front of the anti-Japanese forces of Korea and China. Then

he gave many facts to show that in order to prevent this front, they were frenziedly employing every conceivable intrigue and trick.

He stressed that the incidents that had occurred between the AJPGA and the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units were the result of the sinister Japanese imperialist scheme to alienate the Koreans from the Chinese people. Should we be antagonistic and hostile to each other because of a slight misunderstanding and clashes, it would not only betray the fundamental interests of the Korean and Chinese peoples who were suffering indescribable agony from the Japanese imperialist aggression but result in our being fooled by the heinous plots of the vicious Japanese imperialist aggressors.

The respected leader continued:

"The Japanese imperialists, regarding their occupation of Manchuria as a military success, are now behaving most arrogantly, overestimating their strength. Their aggressive ambitions know no bounds.

"They are gloating over China proper, keeping an eye on Siberia of the Soviet Union.

"We are now fighting against this enemy.

"The peoples of Korea and China should unite and unite again and join all efforts. We ought to rally all the anti-Japanese forces now.

"The Korean communists consider the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units their comrades-in-arms who are fighting against the common enemy, and prize true friendship with the Chinese people.

"If the peoples of Korea and China unite firmly and form an anti-Japanese allied front in their battle with Japanese imperialism, the enemy will never escape his defeat, and will be driven out of Korea and China."

As he went on, the faces of Wu and his men gradually softened and their attitude betrayed an undisguised air of sympathy and admiration.

They were greatly impressed by his masterly genius in understanding the great revolutionary situation, by his mettle, flawless logic, broad magnanimity and unshaken faith in the victory of the anti-Japanese war as well as arguments.

Wu Yicheng who had been lost in deep thought mutely called out his orderly and told him to serve tea. It seemed that the insolent commander belatedly felt ashamed of his inhospitality.

His adjutants, too, came in and out in perplexity. The atmosphere began to ease.

Entertaining the great leader to tea, Wu Yicheng smilingly asked one question after another.

He said:

"I have heard you, Commander, have been fighting courageously against the Japanese scoundrels.

"The guerrillas have been fighting the Japs well, though they are not many in number. Yet we are not doing as well as you though we are many in number. I see you are all carrying new rifles. I wonder if you would be willing to exchange them for some old rifles of ours."

The great leader laughed heartily and replied in a lighter vein: "You can have them for nothing, if you want, because once we attack the Japs, we will have no problem of arms. So, why should we exchange them?"

At this Wu felt silly and tried to pass it off as a joke, and raised awkward questions.

Yet, the great leader did not blame Wu and gave reasoned answers.

There was no end to Wu's questions. He spoke out all his doubts about the AJPGA.

He asked: "I hear the Communist Party robs people of their property. Is it true?"

The great leader thought that this question could not be simply laughed off. It was the most vicious propaganda the enemy had cooked up to slander the communists and to which the commanders of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units had fallen prey.

The enemy had conducted a vile propaganda that the Autumn Harvest Struggle and Spring Crisis Struggle of peasants in Jiandao was a "predatory act" of communists, and the politically backward commanders of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units believed in this propaganda.

Having pointed out that the Communist Party's "plunder" of others' property is a propaganda gimmick in order to slander the ill-clad, hunger-stricken peasants fighting against the landlords who were bleeding them white, the great leader queried: **"Don't you think the landlords were too avaricious? Tenant farmers are starving with nothing to eat. Is it not true that only when the landlords are generous enough to give them provisions instead**

of taking them away, they can do farming? Because the landlords lay provisions in store and do not lend them out, the peasants have no choice but to rise and fight since they are nearly starved to death. For the same reason the peasants in China had risen in revolt in the past in order to build a 'peaceful land of blessing', hadn't they?"

Wu Yicheng expressed his full agreement with the great leader's words. He also supported the just fighting objectives of the AJPGA, accepted his line of anti-Japanese allied front as a correct line for the victory of the great anti-Japanese war, and pledged himself to join in the front.

After the meeting that day Wu asked the great leader to form the Zaijiali as a token of his unbreakable pledge.

Zaijiali, meaning one family, was a Chinese organization called "Qinghongbang". The Chinese people held it dear.

Wu's request was an expression of his respect for this organization. It was also a token of his acceptance of the great leader's idea on the allied front and of his trust in him.

Wu's highest respect for the great leader was manifested in many respects. Wu called him "Commander Kim" with due respect and arranged a grand luncheon for him.

The great leader, delighted with the change in the leadership of the National Salvation Army including Wu Yicheng, proposed that a permanent organization called a united office of the anti-Japanese units be set up in order to follow up the success of the negotiations. With representatives from both sides, the office would keep regular contact between the AJPGA and the National Salvation Army, exchange information on the enemy and take practical measures for coordinated operations.

The negotiations were brought to a successful conclusion.

Then Wu Yicheng asked the great leader to speak something about the negotiations before the soldiers of the National Salvation Army.

Deeply moved by his words, Wu wanted him to correct the biased views of no small number of medium- and low-ranking officers and soldiers from the old Chinese Northeastern Army who had no correct idea of the anti-Japanese allied front and refused to accept it, because he was unable to tackle this difficult matter. He thought that the great leader's

speech would have a far greater effect on his soldiers than his bossy prestige.

His expectations proved correct.

The great leader took the floor and appealed for an anti-Japanese allied front to the Chinese medium- and low-ranking officers and rank-and-file soldiers numbering more than a thousand, which moved them deeply and called forth their enthusiastic cheers.

In the speech he announced that the formation through negotiations of an anti-Japanese allied front between the AJPGA and the Chinese National Salvation Army was a landmark in the anti-Japanese war which would lead to the total failure of the sinister scheme of Japanese imperialism to alienate the Korean people from the Chinese. He said:

"The Japanese imperialists had rigged up the 'Wanbaoshan incident' just before they started military action for the occupation of Manchuria.

"This shows that the enemy fears the unity of the Korean and Chinese peoples more than anything else and tries to find room for aggression in their split.

"Through negotiations we have achieved the unity of the anti-Japanese forces of Korea and China which the enemy is dreading most and built the bulwark of anti-Japanese allied front which would isolate Japanese imperialism and bring it a crushing defeat.

"Victory is kept in store for the peoples of Korea and China who have sealed their fraternal friendship and unity."

With infinite respect and admiration the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese soldiers looked up to him as they listened fascinatedly to his speech which scientifically forecast the victorious prospects of the anti-Japanese war, and when his speech was over they cheered: "Commander Kim!", "Commander Kim!", passionately shouting: "Commander Kim is number one!", "We ought to fight with the Korean guerrillas!"

After the meeting closed, the Chinese soldiers said, grasping our hands:

"Commander Kim is a true hero. Till recently we had treated you as if you were enemies. But now we have become real brothers. It is because Commander Kim has awakened us. He is a great leader of the anti-Japanese war."

Their compliments gave us an infinite pride and happiness in

attending on our sagacious leader, and strengthened our firm determination to fight on as ever unyieldingly for the ultimate victory of the anti-Japanese war under his wise guidance.

(2) FOR THE CONSOLIDATION OF THE ANTI-JAPANESE ALLIED FRONT

The Luozigou negotiations occasioned a fresh turn in establishing an anti-Japanese allied front with the units of the Chinese National Salvation Army.

This, however, did not mean the complete improvement in the aggravated relations with them.

The intrigues of the enemy made some of these units still suspicious of and hostile toward the AJPGA.

As we learned later, some vicious officers of Chai Shirong's unit had planned to disarm us when the great leader was in negotiations with Wu Yicheng in Luozigou.

Even after the negotiations, quite a few commanders of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units did not give up their hostility toward us, and plots were being hatched in some areas to murder Korean communists. Some forces tried to attack us so as to give in to the enemy.

Under these circumstances the great leader redoubled his activities to draw as many units of the National Salvation Army as possible into the allied front by taking into account the favourable conditions provided by the negotiations.

He summoned our representative from the united office of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units and gave him precious instructions on the office work. He said:

"Our achievement at the negotiations with Wu Yicheng is but an initial success scored in the formation of an anti-Japanese allied front with the units of the National Salvation Army.

"From now on, we should draw the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese

units into a positive anti-Japanese allied front with us, while making closer contacts with them.

"The objectives of the establishment of the united office of the anti-Japanese units are not only to realize an allied front with the leadership of these units but also to administer this body on our own initiative and achieve rank-and-file unity with broad anti-Japanese soldiers.

"Because of their class limitations most of the leaders of these units are unstable and inactive in the formation of this front. Therefore it is essential to establish rank-and-file unity.

"Now we have possibilities for active work with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units through the united office.

"Availing ourselves of these favourable conditions we have to take the initiative and win over the medium- and low-ranking officers and the rank-and-file soldiers."

He taught the representative specific methods of work.

The great leader said that since the representative could have free access to the units of the National Salvation Army on behalf of the united office, he should frequent them to get in close touch with the medium- and low-ranking officers and soldiers and educate them, and form, above all, brotherly ties, the anti-Japanese society and other legal organizations to rally as many as possible.

Pointing out that the most important task for the education of the anti-Japanese soldiers was to properly explain that the anti-Japanese allied front was in full accord with the interests of the peoples of Korea and China and essential for the victory of the anti-Japanese war, he said:

"It is necessary to see that the anti-Japanese soldiers have full knowledge of the common position of the Korean and Chinese peoples as being victims of Japanese imperialist aggression and have a clear-cut idea of the crafty and vicious nature of the enemy who is resorting to the national alienation machinations, fearing most their militant unity and joint struggle. At the same time the broad masses of anti-Japanese soldiers should be made to realize the treacheries of the reactionary Kuomintang warlords who have capitulated to the Japanese scoundrels and are hostile to the communists so that they should not pin any hope on the warlords.

"Needless to say, this task cannot be carried out in one or two days. It requires persistent persuasion and education.

"This you should bear in mind, and conduct your work among the anti-Japanese soldiers."

This instruction of the great leader brought home to me (O Baek Ryong) his steadfast internationalist stand, his stubborn and revolutionary method of work and his meticulous and dynamic guidance for carrying out all tasks to completion.

After the Luozigou negotiations he not only gave energetic guidance for accomplishing the work with the anti-Japanese soldiers but also himself set examples.

Right after the negotiations with Wu, the great leader met Brigade Commander Shi Zhongheng.

There was a good reason for this.

As far as the units of the National Salvation Army under the control of frontline commander Wu Yicheng were concerned, the Shi-led brigade was the only unit under his direct command, whereas the Chai Shirong-led unit was numerically superior. Chai avoided working with us, because he had been prejudiced by his confidant called Li Chong Chon who had been a boss of a faction of the Independence Army. Slandering the Korean communists the renegade Li had covertly suggested to Chai not to join hands with them, and Chai relied on his advice. So it was impossible to win his unit over immediately.

Under this circumstance the great leader planned to win over Brigade Commander Shi first to make him definitely support the anti-Japanese allied front so that Chai would be compelled to follow suit.

If Shi's brigade, one of the main units under Wu's command, was won over, Chai's unit, though quite large, would find it impossible to operate independently, and follow us whether he liked it or not.

Before he met the brigade commander the great leader inquired into his career through our operative who was the staff officer of Wu's unit.

Before the Japanese imperialist occupation of Manchuria, Shi had served in the Kuomintang Army as its battalion commander and after the September 18 Incident, he had launched into the National Salvation Army movement and become a brigade commander. A man coming from a poor family, he was of good character and popular among the soldiers.

Therefore, the great leader decided that we ought to win over this man and set off to meet him.

We accompanied him to the brigade headquarters. Shi was very pleased and treated him as a distinguished guest.

Unlike other bosses of the National Salvation Army he was strong in anti-Japanese sentiments and had sincerely admired and respected the great leader who had hit the enemy hard at Zhuanjiaolou and Jiapigou. So Shi was moved with emotion by his visit.

When the great leader was ushered into a room by Brigade Commander Shi, orderlies offered him cordial hospitality bringing in tea and towels wrung out of hot water.

Having expressed his gratitude for the hospitable treatment, he sincerely talked of the sufferings of Korean and Chinese people from the aggression of Japanese imperialism, of the prospects of the anti-Japanese war and of the need for the anti-Japanese allied front. Shi listened carefully and fully approved his proposal on the anti-Japanese allied front. He bitterly hated Japanese imperialism and was not hostile to the communists.

In the long conversation with Shi the great leader exchanged his opinions on the military and strategic questions concerning the anti-Japanese war.

While the great leader stayed there, Shi was courteous to him and fully agreed that the formation of an allied front with all the anti-Japanese armed forces was the only way to bring about victory over the Japanese imperialist aggressors.

Thanks to his high prestige, staunch anti-Japanese ideas and generous broad-mindedness, the relations with Shi's unit were easily settled.

Before he left, he assured Shi that the Dongning county seat would be attacked in order to build up the anti-Japanese allied front.

When the great leader was about to leave, Shi and all his officers and orderlies came out and gave him a respectful send-off.

Thanks to his energetic and unremitting activities, our relations with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units improved as days went by and some anti-Japanese units gradually changed their hostile attitude to us.

However, since the units of the National Salvation Army and the mountain rebels were many in number, scattered over a large areas and had no uniform commanding system, their stand and tendencies were

different from each other. This left the work with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units still a tough and complex.

Having grasped such a state of affairs the great leader exerted all efforts to conduct more extensive work with these units on the basis of the already achieved success.

While setting an example himself, he took measures to send many political workers to the National Salvation Army and the mountain rebels.

Underscoring the need to keep concentrating on the work with the units of the anti-Japanese National Salvation Army, he said:

"After the Japanese imperialist occupation of northeast China quite a few members of Zhang Xueliang-led unit upheld the anti-Japanese banner of national salvation against the aggression of Japanese imperialism.

"Moreover, though rejecting the warlord Zhang's principle of non-resistance, the National Salvation Army is still dispersed and undisciplined and lacks unity in action, because it is a spontaneous insurgent army.

"Because of its political backwardness inherent in an army of the propertied class it is constantly vacillating and befooled by the deceptions of Japanese imperialism.

"This hinders our struggle for an anti-Japanese allied front and prevents its easy formation.

"In reality, after the Luozigou talks quite a few units of the National Salvation Army including Wu Yicheng's unit pledged to form an allied front with our AJPGA and wage a joint struggle against Japanese imperialism. Yet many of them are still hostile to the Korean communists and some units are surrendering to Japanese imperialism.

"We should not stop with the success in the negotiations, but boldly go among many of the National Salvation Army units and the mountain rebels to encourage them to keep their anti-Japanese stand of saving the nation to the end and induce them to unite with us and continue to fight for national salvation."

On his instructions, competent military and political cadres of the AJPGA went to work among the Chinese forces—some with the mountain rebels in the neighbourhood of the guerrilla zones and others with the National Salvation Army units in far-off north Manchuria.

Some comrades were sent to the National Salvation Army units as

recruits and others as political workers to the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units which had good relations with us after the formation of anti-Japanese allied front.

Following the great leader's practical example, these comrades surmounted all the difficulties in their work with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese soldiers to materialize his intention.

Around that time, Comrade Kim Chol Ju, an indomitable revolutionary fighter, was active among these soldiers. After winning over Du Yishun's unit and other National Salvation Army forces in Antu, he went to Baqu of Yanji County to visit the Pingri Army which was a large anti-Japanese force and comparatively sound in its tendency.

Xu Kuiwu, commander of this army, was of small landlord origin. When Japanese imperialism had occupied Manchuria, he had called for national salvation against Japan, and had formed a unit of the deserters from the old Chinese Northeastern Army led by Zhang Xueliang and members of the mountain rebels.

Most of his men were formerly hired hands, odd-jobbers and poor peasants exploited and oppressed by Japanese imperialism and landlords. Their anti-Japanese sentiment was strong.

Like other National Salvation Army forces, the Pingri Army, too, wavered when the situation deteriorated, and a section of its leadership favoured surrender.

True to the great leader's teachings on strengthening the work with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, Comrade Kim Chol Ju gave more importance to its patriotic feelings than its negative aspects, and went to Dalupe where the army was stationed.

He wanted to meet its commander Xu Kuiwu in person.

As luck would have it, Xu was seriously ill, and his men were desperately trying to get their commander cured.

Comrade Kim Chol Ju took this opportunity for access to Xu, and suggested to his worrying adjutants that a good doctor be consulted.

Delighted, they readily agreed, because they had had no way to call a doctor into the deep forest where they were hidden.

Comrade Kim Chol Ju came immediately to fetch me (Rim Chun Chu). I was then a surgeon for the AJPGA.

Having arranged for some medicine and injections he returned with me.

Xu Kuiwu's illness was serious. Though we had come a long way to cure him he met us with bad grace.

I was not sure if we could win over such an insolent and obstinate man.

Yet, Comrade Kim Chol Ju talked to him nicely and made a sign with the eyes to me to start examination. I checked up the patient, administered medicine and gave an injection.

Fortunately his condition turned for the better the next day. He took food and rose from his bed to have a chat.

When he got over his illness, he changed his attitude and thanked us profusely.

Comrade Kim Chol Ju took this opportunity to get intimate with him.

Impressed by Comrade Kim Chol Ju's modesty, kindness and cogency, he gave up his bossy attitude and became open-hearted. He even confided his secrets during those days.

Comrade Kim Chol Ju then launched his work in real earnest.

Speaking in fluent Chinese, he persuaded Xu in a logical manner, inspiring his national pride and anti-Japanese sentiments.

He recounted historical events to prove that from the last century the Chinese people with a long history and brilliant culture had fallen a victim to the aggression and plunder of the rapacious foreign imperialists. He continued:

"...Who is it that has established settlements in the sacred Chinese territory, put up the notice: 'Out of Bounds to Dogs and Chinese!' and defiled the dignified people of China?... How about northeast China now? Having occupied Manchuria, don't the Japanese imperialist brigands drench it in a sea of blood, following the policy of killing all, plundering all and burning all, turning it into a vast wilderness? Who is it that invites these unpardonable murderous bandits?

"How should the wise and gallant people of Korea and China, who are proud of their time-honoured history, tolerate this massacre and humiliation, graceless statelessness and slavery?..."

Having stirred up Xu's heart that way, Comrade Kim Chol Ju told

him about the conditions for victory in the fight against Japanese imperialism.

He stressed that the key to victory lay in the awakening and unity of the Korean and Chinese peoples, and cited the "Wanbaoshan incident" and other provocations to convincingly prove that the Japanese imperialists feared, above all, the unity of the two peoples and in order to prevent it, they were trying by all means to create national discord.

With a serious look on his face Xu silently listened in agreement to his passionate appeal.

Comrade Kim Chol Ju gave him a full account of the Luozigou negotiations and earnestly told him to follow the banner of anti-Japanese allied front which the great leader had held aloft.

"The Korean communists fight, at the risk of their lives, to wipe out Japanese imperialism.

"We are well aware that when the September 18 Incident took place you resolutely came out under the anti-Japanese banner of national salvation, and are proud of it.

"We are, therefore, comrades-in-arms standing on the same front. We have no reason to quarrel."

Xu Kuiwu was convinced by his impassioned and logical explanation carrying a profound meaning. He deeply repented for his prejudice against the Korean communists, and promised to support the anti-Japanese allied front and pledged his loyalty to it.

Xu added:

"I, too, have heard much about the Korean guerrillas who have put up a good, courageous fight against the Japanese brigands. We have to fight together."

Comrade Kim Chol Ju's energetic efforts and seasoned method of work finally drew the Pingri Army into the allied front.

Later, Commander Xu became a staunch anti-Japanese fighter for national salvation and joined the Allied Anti-Japanese Forces.

With their persevering and unselfish efforts many workers dispatched to the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units were winning over the bigoted and ignorant bosses of the National Salvation Army and its soldiers to the anti-Japanese allied front in accordance with the great leader's line.

Our political worker who had joined a national salvation force stationed in Bosotgol in Yulangcun village as a cook conducted his work enduring all insults and maltreatment. He established contacts with the orderly of the commander and many rank-and-file soldiers and won their confidence.

When this unit organized a battle in Bajiazi, Helong County, he voluntarily joined it and heroically fought to beat back the enemy's counterattack and ensure a shining victory in the battle.

After the battle, the Chinese soldiers praised his sacrificing spirit with one accord, and admitted that had it not been for him their unit would have been destroyed.

Having won the confidence of anti-Japanese soldiers through his own actions, our political worker became more intimate with them, and a little later organized an Anti-Japanese Association with a company commander's orderly and other core members.

Later almost all the members of the unit were enlisted in this association. This isolated some vicious officers and brought the censure of soldiers at large on those who were hostile in word and deed to the communists. Under the pressure of his men, the commander was compelled to announce his agreement to the anti-Japanese allied front.

As days went by, an increasing number of units of the National Salvation Army were rallied under the banner of this front upheld by the great leader.

At the same time he energetically guided all the people and the Children's Corps members in the guerrilla zones to actively assist the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units so as to create an atmosphere of friendship and solidarity between the peoples of Korea and China, and between the AJPGA and these units.

In accordance with his teaching, the people of Macun in the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone washed uniforms for big and small units of National Salvation Army and mountain rebels including the Qingshandui and Aimindui stationed in the surrounding forests and sent them mushrooms and other edible wild herbs. And a tailor corps was sent to make their uniforms.

An art troupe of the Children's Corps was welcomed most by the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese soldiers.

Full of bright, vigorous and revolutionary spirit of the children in the guerrilla zones, the art performance delighted them infinitely by showing that the brotherly peoples of Korea and China should unite firmly to drive Japanese imperialism, the common enemy, out of Korea and Manchuria and to live a happy life in their liberated homelands. The performance also made them understand and long for the worthwhile life and heroic struggle of the people in the guerrilla zones.

The bosses of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units admitted:

"The boys and girls Commander Kim has brought up are particularly excellent. The performance of Korean children strengthens our confidence in the victory of the anti-Japanese war."

On holidays and memorial occasions they invited the Children's Corps art troupe, gave it cordial welcome and presented it with school supplies and even revolvers as gifts before its return home after the performance.

The sincere assistance of the people in the guerrilla zones and the lovely art performance of the Children's Corps members infused a warm feeling of militant friendship into the frozen hearts of the commanders, medium- and low-ranking officers and soldiers of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units.

The great leader's line of allied front blossomed in reality and developed the National Salvation Army units and the mountain rebels into a reliable anti-Japanese force. Thanks to his wise leadership the difficult problem of anti-Japanese united front bore fruit.

(3) ATTACK ON DONGNING COUNTY SEAT

After the Luozigou negotiations the great leader prepared for an attack on the Dongning county seat. Its aim was to administer a bigger military and political blow at Japanese imperialism with large-scale coordinated operation, following the success of the talks and proving the effectiveness of the anti-Japanese allied front.

The choice of this county seat for the target of the first joint operation

was based on his calculation that since the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units had lost it to the enemy, the attack would heighten the morale of the commanders and soldiers of these units and convince them of the vitality of the coordinated operation through practice.

Prior to this action he called a joint meeting with the commanders of Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units through the united office of anti-Japanese units in Luozigou. The meeting proceeded as he had planned.

Since Wu Yicheng who respected the great leader's words approved of his suggestions of the operation and Brigade Commander Shi Zhongheng responded to it positively, the bosses of other Chinese units accepted it without any objection.

At the end of the successful meeting, he made preparations for attack. He picked up a company from the Wangqing district guerrilla unit and recruited one company respectively from the guerrilla forces active in Yanji and Hunchun districts. He also made sure that the revolutionary organizations in Wangqing, Hunchun and Yanji guerrilla zones should make proper arrangements for assistance to raise the militancy of the Chinese units.

He called upon the men who were to take part in the attack that they should fully prepare themselves mentally, bearing it in mind that the operation was not a simple military action but a political work with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units. He told them:

"Whether or not we can draw more of the National Salvation Army and other Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units into the anti-Japanese struggle in future largely depends on the way we conduct this battle.

"The more courageously and stubbornly we fight in the van to win a great victory, the firmer will be the faith of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units in victory in their struggle against Japanese imperialism and the greater the confidence they will have to follow us. This will show the strength of our AJPGA and consolidate the anti-Japanese allied front with them.

"You, therefore, should be deeply conscious of the objective of this battle and bear its brunt.

"You should also make them trust and follow us not only in battles but also in day-to-day affairs and, at the same time, you should set an example

and educate them so that they can realize what sort of men the Korean communists are."

Treasuring deep in their hearts the great leader's earnest instruction on making this battle a great turning point in the formation of allied front, the commanding officers and soldiers of the AJPGA made full arrangements.

The people in the guerrilla zones made brisk preparations to encourage the soldiers of the Chinese units who would be fighting along with us.

At last the day for departure to the Dongning county seat arrived.

The AJPGA and the well-known National Salvation Army in the vicinity of Xiaowangqing assembled at one place.

Their strength was tremendous, which delighted and elated the soldiers of the National Salvation Army who had been active separately.

Presently the great leader ordered the combined forces to set out.

The ranks trekked through forests to the vicinity of Macun. Around that time the people of the Wangqing guerrilla zone where I (O Jin U) was resident were hurrying up with preparations to welcome the combined forces. Informed by the organization that these forces were expected to stop over in Macun, the Children's Corps arranged an art performance and the Women's Association prepared food.

The meal was yet to be ready, when the advance contingent arrived on horseback. Conveying the great leader's instructions on advancing the mealtime by three hours, they informed that the units were due to get here soon.

The members of the Women's Association were perturbed.

It was by no means an easy task to prepare the meal three hours earlier than schedule. However difficult and tough it might be, it had to be carried out without fail. There should be no delay of the advance of the combined forces led by the great leader even a moment.

All people in Dawangqing and Xiaowangqing came out to hull rice, slaughter cattle, draw water, chop firewood and gather edible mountain herbs. Everybody was on the run.

But rice hulling was more than they could do. The mill was six kilometres away from the village. It was working at top speed.

All of a sudden three enemy planes flew in and dropped bombs there.

The bombs burst before and behind the mill. It seemed to crumble down. The Women's Association members, however, stuck it out at the risk of their lives.

By displaying an unrivalled sacrificing spirit they prepared the food by the time set by the great leader.

When the AJPGA entered the village followed by the Chinese units all the people welcomed them with shouts of joy.

The whole village was in a festive mood.

After the meal the members of the Children's Corps put their art performance on the stage. The Chinese soldiers were highly delighted and cheered each time an item ended. Then came the time for departure. The Chinese soldiers started out in high spirits. The villagers saw them off to some distance, wishing them a victorious battle.

The advancing columns stretched out as far as some four kilometres, and it was a magnificent scene. Exhilarated by the warm send-off, they quickened their steps toward the Dongning county seat.

The march continued for days.

Whenever they halted, the guerrillas, on the great leader's instructions, did different chores in order to make a good impression on the Chinese soldiers through practical example.

Though fatigued from the march, they swept the courtyards of the houses where they were billeted and drew water and helped the people with their harvest.

In the evening they entertained themselves and village people with dance and other items.

Saying that they were seeing such an army for the first time, the villagers treated the guerrillas like their own flesh and blood, and accorded them hearty hospitality. This made the Chinese soldiers to think a great deal of things. They gradually came to realize why the guerrillas led by the great leader enjoyed positive support of the people anywhere, anytime.

The march was a process of education for the Chinese soldiers and a series of significant days having a revolutionary effect upon them.

At first Chai's unit was at the head of the combined forces on the march. As they approached the Dongning county seat, his men took fright at a stack of straw at night and made off taking it for the enemy, thereby throwing the contingents into confusion.

To march further was impossible.

The great leader reorganized the advancing contingents so that the guerrillas were at the head. Now the march was put in order and quickened.

The Chinese soldiers' respect for and trust in the guerrillas deepened with the lapse of time.

Under the command of the great leader the guerrillas entered a forest near the county seat, leading the National Salvation Army. He ordered the combined forces to rest there and organized once again a detailed reconnaissance of the Dongning county seat.

It was a major town on the Soviet-Manchurian border with a river in between, and an important military base of Japanese imperialism. The population was large and there were many big establishments. The town was fenced by a high wall and a strong battery was emplaced on the western hill outside the town.

Within this walled town were thousands of enemy troops including one battalion of the Kwantung Army, a puppet Manchukuo Army regiment, the police and the Self-defence Corps. There were gates in the east, south and west of the town.

The attack on this town was commanded by the great leader. He gave combat orders based on accurate information gained through reconnaissance mission: The AJPGA, the main force of the combined army, was to capture the battery on the western hill, an enemy's major point, and charge into the town by the West Gate and attack the barracks of the Kwantung Army; and the Chinese Anti-Japanese National Salvation Army units to storm the East and the South Gates.

When the sun set and darkness fell on September 6, 1933, the combined forces approached the town.

At 9:00 p.m. a signal shot fired by the great leader shattered the stillness.

The guerrillas surrounding the western hill battery started firing volleys.

At the first, the enemy manning the battery was too surprised to resist, but soon started returning the fire.

The battery went into action, and fire from both sides was intense.

The enemy offered stiff resistance. On the western hill there were four

pillboxes and mortar positions connected by secret underground passages with the barracks of the imperialist aggressor army within the town. Assisted by reinforcements pouring in through the tunnels the enemy put up stubborn resistance. Manipulating the battery, the enemy tried to hold in check our attack. As a matter of fact the attack on the walled town was impossible without silencing the battery. In fact it was tantamount to exposing the rear of the combined forces to the enemy's attack.

Taking in this situation, the great leader planned a decisive attack on the battery to open an advance route for the combined forces. He ordered a part of his guerrilla units to detour to the northern side of the battery and hit it from behind to draw off the enemy fire. The battery met intense fire from both the front and the rear, and the enemy fire was dispersed. At that moment our units fired point-blank into the mouth of the battery, and also silenced the pillboxes. At the same time some guerrillas crawled up to the battery and threw Yongil Bombs.

With loud explosions, clouds of smoke and fire went up. This was the signal for a general charge.

Raising a battle-cry, the combined forces swarmed into the town from all directions.

The main forces of the AJPGA under the command of the great leader stormed into the castle gate and surrounded the barracks of the Kwantung Army, firing a fusillade.

The enemy became desperate. Firing machine guns they made several attempts to counterattack.

Our intense fire, however, kept the enemy locked inside the barracks, allowing not a single man to come out.

When the guerrillas were blockading the barracks, the Chinese units which poured into the town through the East and the South Gates started their operations.

The battle was as good as won. Despite their heavy setbacks the Japanese troops were still persisting. But the puppet Manchukuo troops were watching for a chance to flee, only firing intermittently.

Seeing the demoralized Manchukuo Army, the great leader sent a message to its regiment headquarters asking it to stop resistance and negotiate. This was to win over the Manchukuo Army, isolate the Japanese aggressor army and give it a crushing blow.

Faced with imminent ruin, the regiment of the Manchukuo Army sent representatives, readily agreeing to negotiate.

The respected leader met the representatives and told them:

"As you see, the issue of the battle is clear. We have already occupied the best part of the walled town. You are Chinese, why are you going to die for the Japanese imperialist aggressors? You ought to seek the way to rebirth. You must rid yourselves of the ignominy of being traitors to the nation. You should not hesitate in expressing your stand in action against Japanese imperialism. We want to treat you as our friends."

The representatives of the Manchukuo Army were moved to tears by his warm words which showed them the road of revival despite their unforgettable crimes against the country and the nation. They promised cooperation with the combined forces and pledged to turn their guns against the Japanese.

In the meantime, the combined forces followed up their advantage. Most of the walled town was brought under their control. With fierce assault the guerrillas seized the enemy's munition plant and arsenals and captured quantities of weapons and other war supplies. Political workers conducted brisk propaganda among the population who defied dangers to come out in the streets and give enthusiastic welcome to the combined forces. But some of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit officers and soldiers who had not given up their brigandish nature plundered the people's property and outraged the families of the Manchukuo Army. This unexpected incident reversed the combat situation all of a sudden. Infuriated by this banditry, the Manchukuo troops offered stiff resistance in order to avenge their families.

The day was breaking. Yet, the Manchukuo troops who had promised to rise up in mutiny were mounting counterattacks and the Chinese units were more interested in carting out loot than in fighting.

The great leader who had been watching the situation ordered his guerrillas to decisively beat back the counterattack of the enemy and drive them into a corner of the town so that the wayward Chinese units could be put to rights.

The guerrillas undertook difficult operations to smash the enemy's counteroffensives against the Chinese units. A fierce street fighting took place again.

Bearing in mind the great leader's earnest instructions on showing the stamina of Korean communists with exemplary battle, the guerrillas mounted a lightning attack and gave the enemy a staggering blow.

The disorder inside the Chinese units was overcome. Morning was advancing. Enemy reinforcements might possibly appear.

Having considered that the objectives of the attack had been achieved in the main as more than 200 Japanese aggressors and upwards of 300 troops of the Manchukuo Army had been wiped out and political work conducted among the townsfolk, the great leader ordered the combined forces to withdraw.

On his orders the combatants of the AJPGA covered the withdrawing Chinese units by engaging the resisting enemy.

While the guerrillas were containing the enemy in the vantage ground outside the walled town, the National Salvation Army units pulled back deep into mountains.

Frightened by enemy fire coming from all sides, they had left behind Brigade Commander Shi Zhongheng who had been wounded in battle. The brigade commander was in danger of falling into the hands of the enemy.

On learning this the great leader sent political instructor Choe Chun Guk and other guerrillas to his rescue.

On his order, they got to the courtyard of the empty house where the brigade commander was lying unconscious. Bullets spattered all round. The commander was alone, groaning with pain, his adjutants and orderlies having beaten a retreat.

The guerrillas promptly took him on their backs and were running out of the street, fighting back the pursuing enemy troops. Bullets hissed about their ears.

Unexpectedly enemy troops appeared in their way. Nowhere to evade. The situation was critical. Yet, it was impermissible for the guerrillas to get out of the crisis, leaving the wounded behind.

The great leader had earnestly told them to save him under whatever circumstances, as he had followed the people's guerrillas and placed his faith in them.

The only way out was to force their way through the enemy forces.

Having promptly taken in the situation, Comrade Choe Chun Guk

knocked down an enemy officer with a single shot and rushed ahead against the enemy. He was followed by his men who took turns to carry the wounded on their backs, throwing the captured hand grenades. Enemy troops were mowed down and the way opened.

The guerrillas rushed towards the castle gate, covering the wounded from before and behind.

The pursuing enemy troops took to their heels in a flurry when they faced the volleys fired by the guerrillas who had been covering the last withdrawal of the Chinese units from the ruins of the wall.

Being carried on the backs of guerrillas, the commander Shi said with emotion:

"I owe my life to Commander Kim Il Sung. Had it not been for him I would have been captured by the enemy and met a miserable death. Am I the only man who was saved? No, he saved all our units. If our National Salvation Army had not been called into the anti-Japanese united front, they would have been reduced to bandits or destroyed by the enemy. Unity with the AJPGA enabled us to conduct such a big operation as the battle in Dongning county seat and achieve so great a victory. Commander Kim Il Sung is an outstanding leader of the anti-Japanese war. Victory shall be ours if we do as he teaches."

The attack on the Dongning county seat, the first coordinated operation of the AJPGA and the National Salvation Army, was crowned with a shining victory.

The victory firmly convinced the men and officers of the Chinese units that if they fight in cooperation with the Korean communists they will surely be able to defeat any strong enemy and achieve their aim—anti-Japanese national salvation.

The Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit soldiers who had witnessed the lofty character of the AJPGA men and their self-sacrificing fighting spirit through the operation got to have a correct understanding of the Korean communists, discarded their national prejudices and looked on them as true friends. The warm feelings of friendship between the AJPGA and the National Salvation Army units ran high.

After this resounding victory, which was a new turning point in the formation of the anti-Japanese allied front, the combined forces returned to Luozigou under the command of the great leader, and had a meeting to

sum up the battle. The meeting was attended by the members of the AJPGA and all the members of the Wu Yicheng, Li Sanxia, Chai Shirong and Shi Zhongheng units. At the meeting there was an unexpected occurrence.

Addressing the combined forces, Wu Yicheng, though ascribing the victory to the cooperation with the AJPGA, claimed that Chiang Kaishek's "aid" was necessary for further struggle against Japanese imperialism, which is a strong enemy.

His speech enraged the guerrillas. Hardly controlling his feelings Paek Il Pyong, commander of the Hunchun company, stepped forward and delivered a fiery speech denouncing Wu's stand.

This triggered off Wu's hot anger. Saying that he was insulted in face of many Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese unit soldiers, Wu shouted that Paek could not be forgiven and that he should be arrested right away.

Company Commander Paek was apprehended. At this the guerrillas flew into a passion and gripped their rifles. None of them wanted to remain indifferent at the sight of their revolutionary comrade-in-arms being arrested unjustly.

"Why was he seized? You have no right to do so," they shouted with arms in hand, when the National Salvation Army soldiers did not remain onlookers, but took up guns. It was a critical moment.

The anti-Japanese allied front which had been successfully brought about thanks to the great leader's efforts was again in danger of disintegration. It was a touch and go. If any one started to fire there would be terrible bloodshed.

At this juncture the great leader came to the meeting place. Having noticed the strained atmosphere at once, with great presence of mind, he heard about the whole circumstance and took the floor.

Addressing the members of the AJPGA, he said:

"Your desire to save your comrade is fully understandable. But just think over again for what we have come here and why we got through the difficult phase shedding blood in the attack on the Dongning county seat!

"We, communists, should not act under the influence of a passing emotion. We must not spoil a great thing for a trivial thing.

"We are here to join hands with the National Salvation Army and strike at Japanese imperialism in coordination. We have shown the prowess of

Korean communists in the battle, and the high-ranking officers of the National Salvation Army, to say nothing of its rank-and-file soldiers, admire and put their faith on us.

"It can be said that our objectives to expand the anti-Japanese allied front here are being successfully carried out.

"Should we make enemies of all those ready to fight under the banner of the joint anti-Japanese struggle, simply because the supreme commander of the National Salvation Army is now going to harm the company commander? Before we, communists, do anything, we should first decide which is beneficial to the revolution.

"We should not bring great losses to the revolution because of trifles.

"If we go the ultra-'Leftist' way as you do, we cannot rescue the company commander, and will break away from the National Salvation Army once and for all. This will cause tremendous losses to the revolution and bring nothing but good to Japanese imperialism."

The AJPGA men regretted their rash act and hung down their heads. Each of his words gnawed at their hearts. They felt really ashamed at their indiscreet act which might probably make a big blunder out of a momentary excitement.

The soldiers of the National Salvation Army were the next to hear his speech made in fluent Chinese.

Having pointed out that to clash with each other over trivial things was detrimental to victory in the great anti-Japanese war and impermissible to the comrades-in-arms fighting on the allied front, he said that guns should be levelled at the Japanese imperialist aggressors, the common enemy.

He emphatically noted: "We have so far fought under different conditions. Therefore there may be differences between each other's opinions as regards a number of questions. However, our approach to the greatest and most fundamental matter is absolutely the same. It is the stand on the Japanese imperialist aggressors. We are all against Japanese imperialism and take it as our sworn enemy.

"It is an ample ground for our becoming comrades-in-arms. The other problems are inconsequential and become by no means obstacles to the joint struggle on the anti-Japanese allied front."

Having reassured that to quarrel over the minor problem when

formidable Japanese imperialism was hell-bent on its Asian domination was disadvantageous for the anti-Japanese war, he called on the peoples of Korea and China to unite closely for the dedication of all forces to the victory of the great anti-Japanese war.

His earnest words deeply appealed to the soldiers of the National Salvation Army.

A bright and tender look on their faces, these soldiers who had behaved rudely a while ago shouted in a tone of excitement:
"Commander Kim Il Sung is No. one!"

"Commander Kim is right!"

"Company Commander Paek should not be put to death!"

Threat was thus removed once again from the anti-Japanese allied front which had suffered many ups and downs. The precarious situation was straightened up thanks to the broad magnanimity, noble character and intelligence of the great leader who treasured the interests of the revolution more than anything else.

Wu Yicheng in person untied the rope binding Company Commander Paek Il Pyong, and apologized, asking him not to take offence.

After this incident the allied front with the Chinese units became further consolidated. When anyone attempted to provoke the guerrillas, the soldiers of the National Salvation Army shut him up of their own accord, and set the highest value on friendship with us. After their combat results were summed up, the units of the combined forces set out for their respective areas of activities.

The Paek Il Pyong-led company left Luozigou for Hunchun. On the way the company met a surprise attack from the enemy "punitive force". Surrounded, the company was unable to get out of the peasant house where it had been resting under a guard.

The numerically superior enemy pressed on, closing the ring of encirclement. The company commander and his men dug out heating stones from the floor and set them as a shield to fight back desperately. Yet, the enemy pressed on, though they lost many in the attempt.

Then the company commander flung open the kitchen door and rolled down the lid of the cooking pot in an attempt to draw the enemy's attention to it and make a breakthrough. The enemy concentrated fire in

the direction of the lid in the belief that the company force would slip off that way.

The company lost no time to break through the enemy's weak link.

It was at that moment, with a bugle sound reverberating throughout the valley, that men of the National Salvation Army came along running.

Hearing the gunshots they had rushed to the aid of the guerrillas from four kilometres away.

The Paek's company together with the National Salvation Army men went over to counterattack and wiped out all of the more than 100 strong "punitive force". After the engagement, the guerrillas and the Chinese soldiers hugged each other and whirled round for joy over the victory.

It was a most impressive scene.

The anti-Japanese allied front the great leader had managed to form after many twists and turns became more solid and developed in the course of the struggle.

3. THE INITIATIVE FIRM IN HAND

(1) BATTLE IN DEFENCE OF XIAOWANGQING

The respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung, great military strategist and ever-victorious, iron-willed brilliant commander, sagaciously led the AJPGA and the people in the guerrilla zones in a heroic struggle to frustrate the enemy's large-scale "winter punitive operations" and defend the zones.

Having suffered one setback after another in his "punitive operations" against the guerrilla zones bordering the Tuman River, the enemy ascribed his ignominious reverses to the seasonal conditions of verdant summer and autumn, and prepared for "winter operations" from summer, regarding winter as the "best season for punitive operations".

On August 8, 1933 the Japanese imperialists called a Cabinet meeting for the solution of the so-called "Jiandao problem", sent high-ranking officials to Manchuria to have a meeting with the chiefs of the Kwantung Army and lend final confirmation to the "punitive measures" at Yanji.

At a conference the high-ranking Cabinet officials and the bosses of the Kwantung Army and its gendarmerie, the special agencies, the embassy and the local gendarmerie, army and police agreed on the programme for "winter punitive operations" designed to simultaneously "strike out" all the guerrilla zones along the Tuman River centring on the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone—the headquarters of the Korean revolution.

In the first place, the enemy organized the "special investigation team" with the Jiandao special agency as its kernel, to spy out the actual conditions inside the guerrilla zones, while conducting aerial reconnaissance.

Along with this, large army and police forces and gendarmerie were

massed around the guerrilla zones.

The Jiandao district guards belonging to the Kwantung Army were reorganized and deployed around the Tuman River guerrilla zones centring on Xiaowangqing and troops of the Kwantung Army and the occupationist forces stationed in Korea were sent there by train and car, carrying with them modern weapons and other war material. The local gendarmerie, police and Self-defence Corps were largely reinforced.

In early winter 1933 the enemy troops surrounding the guerrilla zones stood at far more than ten thousand.

When they provoked the "Manchurian Incident" two years ago the Japanese imperialist aggressors had mobilized only two divisions and a few independent garrisons to fight hundreds of thousand troops of the Chinese Northeastern Army, a regular armed force. But huge armed forces were drawn into the "punitive operations" against the guerrilla zones.

This was an eloquent proof of their intense fear of the might of the AJPGA under the command of the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung.

The enemy went into action all at once in the middle of November, 1933.

The great leader told the AJPGA and the people in the guerrilla zones that the zones were faced with severe ordeals, and called upon them to firmly unite as one man, and, with unshaken confidence of the final victory and staunch fighting spirit, come out in a heroic defensive battle to uphold the gains of the revolution.

The guerrilla zones, a new world of the people, were transformed into a scene of decisive battle with the enemy. Among them, the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone was the fiercest battlefield. The enemy rushed the 5,000-odd-strong main forces simultaneously in three directions—Wangqing, Jiapigou and Qinggouziling, in their efforts to attack the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone from three sides.

They clamoured about "separate advance and joint attack" and "scorched-earth operation". It meant destroying and burning all, narrowing the encircling net around the guerrilla zones.

Beside the infantry attack, the enemy carried out indiscriminate bombing and bombardment to transform the forests and villages in the guerrilla zones into a sea of fire.

Enemy airplanes constantly circled over the major points of Xiaowangqing and Dawangqing to watch the movements of the guerrillas and dropped random bombs on the civilian refugees.

The respected leader Comrade Kim Il Sung disclosed the enemy tactics to the guerrilla army's commanding officers. He said:

"The enemy who failed in his 'spring operation' is employing different tactics from the last time. When he was hit hard in the past in his attack allegedly to wipe out the guerrilla zones at a stroke, he made hasty retreat. But now the invading enemy has changed his tactics. He not only sets in motion a larger force than ever but also conducts three-pronged enveloping operation and scorched-earth operation.

"Yet, no matter how many armed forces and modern combat supplies may be mobilized they cannot decide the issue of the battle.

"If we carry out flexible guerrilla warfare including surprise attack on the enemy by always taking proper advantage of the favourable terrain of the guerrilla zones, we will make his numerous armed forces and heavy arms useless.

"The key to the outcome lies in how we use agile guerrilla tactics by acquiring a quick, proper grasp of the enemy's movements."

Though numerous enemy troops press on, he said, we should give them an annihilating blow by disrupting them with shrewd and flexible actions such as ambush, decoy, surprise attack and night storm, and continued:

"What is important is to take the initiative firmly in battle and place the enemy on the defensive. In other words, it is essential not to get embroiled in their tactics but positively draw them in the net of our tactics."

Having accepted the instructions in which he had put forward the line of operation with confidence, without changing his expression, countering the huge crack armed forces of the enemy with a few companies of guerrillas and Anti-Japanese Self-Defence Corps (AJSDC), the commanding officers of the guerrilla army left for their combat posts with a firm belief in victory.

Though still young, we (O Jin U and O Baek Ryong) joined in the battle with as firm faith as others.

The guerrillas' confidence had been drawn from the experience gained under the great leader's guidance in smashing the enemy's "spring punitive operations" and the experience and lessons learned from other

big and small battles including the attack on the Dongning county seat.

Especially his tactical book *Guerrilla Action* served to heighten the guerrillas' combat preparedness.

This book was written by the great leader after frustrating the enemy's "spring punitive operations" in order to teach scientific guerrilla tactics and military knowledge to the guerrillas. It dealt with the fundamental principle of his original guerrilla tactics—avoiding the enemy's spearhead and using his weak points to strike him, quick win-the-battle operation and taking the initiative in battle through quick dispersion, concentration and movement of armed forces—the methods of ambush, decoy, attack and night storm, and the duties of men and officers in battle and their rules on action.

Since this book on the profound principles of guerrilla tactics was written in a facile and explicit style, it was easy to understand and learn by heart. All the guerrillas mastered it.

Though the enemy started the "winter punitive operation" by increasing the armed forces and war supplies several-fold, we countered it with full tactical preparedness.

On November 17, 1933 the enemy attacked the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone.

The battle was fierce from the start.

The first battle in this zone, where the great leader was, took place in front of Mt. Bbyojok, the gateway to the Xiaowangqing valley, and Mt. Mapan, the gateway to Dawangqing valley. The enemy approached with great caution because he had been dealt a staggering blow there many times. Though these places were awefully disagreeable to them there was no other passage to the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone. Therefore he had no other choice but to venture there though he knew that a dreadful pit of death was awaiting them.

Under the cover of thick morning fog, the enemy troops swarmed like a pack of wolves to Mt. Bbyojok and attempted to get through by transforming it into a sea of fire with sudden machine-gun and mortar firing. Yet the combat-ready guerrillas and AJSDC members returned fire from behind the defence installations giving them the first crushing blow.

The first victory here was instantly reported all over the guerrilla zone, heightening the morale of the guerrillas and the people.

The enemy forces were given a hail of bullets along the Mt. Mapan line, too. In face of the sustained guerrilla firing, some of the enemy forces took a roundabout way to mount frontal and flank attacks. But a hand-grenade corps was lying in wait in accordance with the premeditated plan of the great leader, and the enemy forces were wiped out by our hand-grenades in their attempts at detour attack.

Despite the heavy losses in their first offensive, the enemy troops could not penetrate any part of the guerrilla zone. Mts. Bbyojok and Mapan were firm in defence of the entrance to the zone.

Next day the infuriated enemy launched another general offensive, barbarously bombing the Xiaowangqing valley around Macun and Dalishugou and concentric bombardment in and around Mt. Bbyojok.

In defiance of the intense firing, the guerrillas and the AJSDC members defending the mountain administered one crushing blow after another to the attacking enemy, from the deep trenches, and withdrew to a favourable place on their own initiative and lay in ambush.

The enemy forces who had managed to break through this line, littering the road with dead bodies, surged toward Macun. On the way they met a hail of bullets scores of times at many turns in the mountains and under cliffs. Yet the numerically superior enemy forces forced their way ahead with fresh reinforcements and tried to stick to the lines they had already occupied. At night they camped there and brought in artillery pieces and heavy guns and made the vicinity a sea of fire to prevent our surprise attack.

While the enemy troops were making for Macun from Mt. Bbyojok, other units from Jiapigou were moving toward the northwest of Macun. suffering heavily from the rugged terrain and frequent raids of our forces, and still another enemy force was crossing over the Qinggouzi Pass in the southeastern direction. If the enemy's advance was not arrested, our forces would possibly be attacked from three sides.

But, as soon as more than 500 enemy troops got across the pass down into a narrow gorge, they were caught in the guerrilla ambush and battered severely.

When the "punitive operations" started, the great leader had sent guerrillas there, anticipating that the enemy would cross the pass.

20-30 in number, they put up a do-and-die fight, because they were

aware that if the enemy was allowed to pass, the guerrilla zone would be torn off in one flank and the headquarters and the people in the zone endangered. Each time the defeated enemy forces regrouped themselves and went over the pass, they were hit back with massive losses, and nailed down there.

Bloody battles went on in different parts of the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone.

A fierce battle took place in Ssukbatgol, too. A small unit of the guerrilla army was stubbornly fighting to keep the enemy from the Dawangqing valley. Though it consisted of a little over ten YCLK members, the unit was holding in check hundreds of troops of the Japanese "punitive forces" and the Self-defence Corps and the puppet Manchukuo Army.

When they found that our force was small in the valley, the enemy troops pitched an encircling net. The "punitive forces" were pressing on from the front and the Self-defence Corps from the right flank, while the puppet Manchukuo Army was making a detour round the back.

We were incomparably at odds against the enemy in numerical strength.

The guerrillas, however, relying on the firmly-built log huts, sent straight shots among the enemy forces never allowing them to advance even a step.

Believing in their numerical superiority, the enemy forces kept closing in. The log houses were riddled with bullets and almost all the fighters wounded. Yet, the battle went on. When the enemy charged, all the guerrillas pulled the triggers of their rifles, and when the charging enemy pulled back, they lay down, exhausted.

The situation became worse for the guerrillas as time went by. Yet, under the difficult conditions they shouted to the soldiers of the Self-defence Corps and the puppet Manchukuo Army to surrender, sensing that stricken by fear they were hesitant in charging.

At first the Self-defence Corps members slipped away by ones and twos, and soon all of them began to retreat. The flurried Japanese troops barked, firing machine guns at the retreating corps members, many of whom were killed cruelly. This caused vacillation within the puppet Manchukuo Army. Fearing that they might meet the same fate as the Self-

defence Corps, they took to flight when the Japanese troops resumed charge against the guerrillas.

The situation eased considerably. Yet the guerrillas' struggle was still arduous, because the enemy was numerically superior.

At that time the great leader was in the commanding post in the mountain behind Macun.

He had reports of the heroic struggle at Ssukbatgol, when information came that the enemy had got through the Zhangsanzi valley to get behind Macun by detour.

He came to the aid of the defenders of Ssukbatgol saying that their defensive was a miracle.

With reinforcements he got onto a hill which overlooked Ssukbatgol where a fierce battle was going on.

His eyes gleamed as he looked down at the battlefield.

He said in an incensed voice that a fire of revenge should be showered upon the enemy swarming like a pack of wolves to smash a small post and that the charging enemy would become powerless and collapse like a beast hit at the back of the head, if he was attacked from behind.

He surreptitiously advanced his unit behind the fighting enemy formation to mount a surprise attack.

Firing a volley, they began storming. The enemy was taken by surprise.

The reinforcements were not large. Yet, hit by surprise, the enemy ran away without offering resistance, believing that a large unit was storming.

The YCLK members who were saved from danger rushed out of Ssukbatgol and buried their faces in the arms of the great leader, shouting: "Comrade Commander!"

They were choked with tears by the infinite affection of the great leader who had quit his commanding post to come to their rescue.

With the most proud and dear YCLK members in his warm embrace, the respected leader said in a husky voice as he caressed them tenderly:

"You are real YCLK members. You have fully displayed the invincible fortitude and unrivalled bravery of Korean youth. You are all heroes...."

He remained there until they were sent for treatment at the hospital in the guerrilla zone.

Back to Xiaowangqing, the great leader saw that defences were

strengthened on Hill 715 behind Macun in anticipation of the confluence of the attacking enemy troops in the vicinity of Macun from different directions.

He taught that since they had engaged in battles for several days, using up a large part of their strength, the enemy forces would be utterly exhausted and that by using varying tactics, we should continue to hit them, wearying them out.

The respected leader said:

"The enemy forces should not be afforded even a moment's repose. When they come they should be thrown into ambush and beaten, and when they are nailed down at the spot they must be lured dexterously and hit. Their encampments and convoys have to be raided, hand grenades buried in the campfire and sniping activities carried out.

"With different forms of actions, their armed forces should be annihilated constantly and harried beyond endurance."

His operational policy on disorganizing the enemy, who was far superior in numerical strength, with a constant war of attrition served to give them no momentary peace of mind.

The enemy bluntly expected that since they had seized many parts of the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone, their "punitive operations" would be soon brought to an end. But, on the contrary, the guerrillas and the people who had been evacuated from the burned villages built stronger positions in the forests and mounted constant counterattacks, freely moving along the mountain ridges.

The enemy had penetrated deep into the guerrilla zone. But it meant being deep in the guerrilla ambush. Everywhere our flexible tactics tormented the enemy forces and inflicted heavy losses.

What battered the enemy most with shrewd decoy tactics was the "campfire-mined-explosives operation".

In order to make a feint of the existence of large armed forces, the guerrillas and the AJSDC built campfires here and there in the hills. At the sight of the fire, the enemy troops would clamber up out of breath. When they came near, the guerrillas would quickly bury explosives in the fire and slip away. The enemy forces would rush toward the campfire.

When they were there, they would find the place vacant. They would sit round the fire to warm themselves contentedly in cold winter.

Not acclimatized to bitter cold in the Jiandao area, the enemy troops wore dog-fur caps and overcoats. But at night they were benumbed with cold and did not leave the fire.

When more than ten "punitive troops" were making a fuss around each of the campfire, the explosives would blow up, rubbing them out.

That was the well-known "campfire-mined-explosives operation".

Besides, the sniping activity of the "hunters' team" was stepped up. The "hunters' team" was a crack snipers' team which lay at key points and singled out the enemy officers to shoot dead. There were many crack shots in the guerrilla zone. Some of them were said to shoot off the cap from a man riding on horseback two kilometres off or kill three men with two shots. No one was left alive at the hands of these crack shots.

Now the enemy troops could not move freely, trembling in horror. They could not expect from where stones were showered and bullets came, and felt as if explosives blew up everywhere.

To them every valley and hill and anything else in Xiaowangqing was a source of danger. Having perceived the mood of fear prevalent among the officers and men, the enemy bosses attempted to quickly wind up the "punitive operations" against the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone with decisive military action.

A Japanese unit coming from the direction of Mt. Bbyojok and another making a detour round Jiapigou met in the vicinity of Tokgol in front of Macun. With these reinforcements the enemy tried to annihilate the guerrillas defending Hill 715 and storm into Dalishugou to massacre the civilian refugees there, and thus conclude their operations.

The enemy set fire to the farm-houses in and around Macun, transforming it into a sea of fire and started a violent artillery attack on Hill 715. The hill was engulfed in flames. The guerrillas, however, lay in wait with the serenity of mind in the strong defence installations and hit back hard at the attacking enemy. That day the enemy forces launched attacks more than ten times. Yet they failed to climb up the hill and step into Dalishugou even an inch. They sustained the heaviest losses after their first "punitive operations" against Xiaowangqing.

When dusk fell, the enemy trucked out many dead bodies littering the hillside and withdrew the dispirited troops to Macun where they camped. Campfires were built here and there in the valley. Dog-tired from day-long

hard-fought battle, they lay down in the tents the moment they were pitched. When the night advanced, the sentries in different points fell into a doze.

The great leader who had anticipated it organized a surprise attack on the enemy's encampment. On his order a storming party led by Comrade O Jung Hup set out. It made its way through the forest, and evading the watchful eyes of the sentries, stealthily crawled into the middle of the encampment, fired a volley at the tents and slipped away nimbly. The place was thrown into a commotion like a disturbed beehive.

The sleeping enemy troops showed ugly looks believing that they were attacked by a large unit. Some of them fired in a flurry, others ran out into the snow barefoot and still others randomly fired machine guns at their own troops.

The turmoil lasted as long as an hour. The enemy dared not fall asleep again and fired blindly in terror till daybreak.

The next day the enemy troops went into another attack, forced by the officers. But they were demoralized considerably, and turned to their heels, the moment we mounted a counterattack. The officers themselves knew that their sabre-rattling was useless, and made a retreat at the end, when their men took to flight. That day they attacked the hill many times using artillery and even planes as previously. But they betrayed their vulnerability.

Before sunset they withdrew and made camping preparations. Drawing the lesson from the previous night they posted two or three strings of sentries and got into the tents.

Our night storming party, however, did not allow the enemy to sleep.

It was far past midnight, and when the enemy fell asleep in peace toward dawn, judging that there would be no raid, our storming party attacked. The enemy encampment turned topsyturvy. The enemy troops dispersed like ants, raising a hue and cry in confusion.

This was repeated for days.

By sending night attacking force, the great leader planned to disorganize the demoralized and war-weary enemy soldiers.

He asked the workers of the printing office to produce letters of propaganda for this purpose and gave detailed particulars.

Under hard conditions of repeated enemy offensives, the printing

workers wrote and mimeographed many propaganda letters entitled: "Appeal to the Japanese soldiers!" and "Appeal to the Manchukuo Army soldiers!" The storming party scattered them in the enemy encampment which fell into the hands of enemy soldiers next morning.

The propaganda letter proved very effective.

"Japanese soldiers,

"Why are you forced to die miserably in north Jiandao, an alien land, far away from your dear parents, wives and children? Are you not the sons of workers and peasants?

"Imperialism of military and feudalistic Japan is bleeding your parents and brothers white in the interests of a handful of monopoly capitalists and landlords of Japan. They cheat you into the belief that you would be well-off when Korea and China are seized.

"It, however, will enrich only the monopoly capitalists, and bring you nothing but death and hard life.

"Don't be deceived by the honeyed words of Japanese militarists to take part in the brigandish war of aggression.

"Don't fight against the workers and peasants who are in the same plight as yours.

"The soldiers of the Japanese army!

"Turn your guns at Japanese imperialism, the enemy of the Korean and Japanese peoples! Let us fight shoulder to shoulder against the Emperor system of imperialist Japan, the common enemy!"

This appealing letter of propaganda made the enemy soldiers think over their position. More often than not the propaganda material was found in the bosom of the captured enemy soldiers, which showed what prompted them to surrender.

The enemy was tattered and bruised, yet attempted at a prolonged operation with stubbornness. His intention was to push us into the trap of prolonged operations and exterminate us by freezing and starving one after another to death, as we had nowhere to get hands, weapons and food.

The great leader saw through these insidious designs of the enemy. He calculated that embroiling into the enemy's trap of prolonged operations would facilitate their attempts and that decisive switchover in the tide of war would save the guerrillas and the people in the guerrilla zone.

In order to reverse the war situation he sought a new tactical measure

and rightly judged that since all the enemy's forces including the police and the Self-defence Corps were mobilized in the "punitive operations" against the guerrilla zone, their weak point at which to deal a decisive blow was the rear which was wide open, and put forward a tactical line of combining the defence of the zone with powerful operations to harass the enemy's rear.

But without any study of the obtaining situation, the sectarian-flunkeys and the military adventurists who had no military knowledge declared against this line, persisting only in continued defence. They claimed that to get out of the guerrilla zone meant saving the guerrillas themselves alone and dispersing the forces, and called for the defence of the guerrilla zone and a decisive battle.

The respected leader bitterly criticized their arguments as a dangerous adventurist move to bring destruction to the guerrillas and the people in the guerrilla zone and a foolish rash act devoid of a confidence of victory, and said:

"To clash headlong with the enemy's crack forces which are scores of times superior is an adventurist act which stands no chance of success in the light of the balance of forces between friend and foe.

"Sticking only to defence in a narrow area against an attacking enemy who is intent on prolonging the battle meets his expectations. This is advantageous for the enemy and extremely disadvantageous for our army. To reverse this situation, we must reorganize our armed forces into two units.

"One unit must remain here to fight, while the other advances into the enemy-held area."

He taught that since the enemy's rear was wide open and they themselves hardly expected an attack from that quarter, the guerrillas must boldly and swiftly penetrate into the rear to attack barracks, Self-defence Corps and police stations and storm arsenals and supply agencies and convoys.

This tactical line was a wise one which made it possible to hit hard at the enemy forces and prevent the supply of food and clothing, and obtain war materials for our own troops. It was the most correct line able to continue to strike uneasiness and fear into the enemy's heart, definitely crush the "punitive operations" and reverse the state of war.

In accordance with this new operations plan the AJPGA in the

Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone was reformed into two units. The second company to which the political instructor Choe Chun Guk belonged and some forces remained in the zone for defence, while the other unit under the great leader's direct command, set out for an enemy area.

I(O Baek Ryong) belonged to the latter.

The great leader made sure that his unit could act flexibly and stealthily in the enemy-held area.

When dusk fell, we left the guerrilla zone and moved southward along the mountain ridges. When we had marched a little distance enemy troops came in sight. We dodged them and crossed a hill only to find an enemy camp. The same thing was repeated several times, and sometimes we were crawling on the belly through sentry posts and sometimes making a long detour of the campfire.

As was told by the great leader before departure, we moved as swiftly and stealthily as possible, and safely broke through the ring of encirclement which extended over a distance.

As he had expected the enemy's rear was virtually deserted.

That night we got to the vicinity of Liangshuiquanzi. None of the enemy forces was on sentry duty. Some of the guerrillas were posted on guard in key points of the village, and the rest were billeted in houses.

The news of the guerrillas' arrival under the great leader's command spread all over the village. The area was a semi-guerrilla zone and there was a revolutionary organization in each village. Many of the village heads were organizers. Quite a few people of the village where we were quartered were members of the revolutionary organization, who were terribly anxious about the situation of the guerrilla zones, because the enemy continued to publicize the "complete annihilation of the communist army".

The people, therefore, were highly delighted and surprised to meet the respected leader and warmly welcomed us like their own flesh and blood.

The great leader let the guerrillas have a good rest.

The villagers made millet cake and killed pigs.

The guerrillas who had fought a do-and-die battle, without proper food, ate their fill and had a sound sleep after a long time.

After our fatigue was banished, we went over to positive operations to harass the enemy's rear.

The great leader sent a scout to Liangshuiquanzi at some distance. Looking on Onsong across the Tuman River, this was the place where he had carried out activities with his unit on several occasions. There was a revolutionary organization in the village and the morale of people was good. As in other villages, there were a few policemen and Self-defence Corps members but all the main enemy forces were away in the guerrilla zone.

Informed of this, the great leader advanced his unit there and stormed the enemy suddenly. We conducted political work among the villagers who gave us enthusiastic welcome.

The villagers had thought that the AJPGA had been terribly suffering from the enemy's encirclement. Now their joy and excitement were infinite as they saw brisk military and political activities being carried on in the village under the personal guidance of the respected leader.

Following the raid on Liangshuiquanzi, he organized ambush in the vicinity of Xinnangou. Informed by the revolutionary organization that an enemy convoy carrying provisions was expected to pass that way, we pounced upon the convoy and captured lots of provisions and weapons.

These attacks came as a complete surprise to the enemy who had been engrossed in the "punitive operations" against the guerrilla zone. Given a sound drubbing in the rear, the enemy had no choice but to send some of his "punitive forces" back to the rear.

On the way back to the guerrilla zone, the great leader ordered us to attack the enemy in Beifengwudong and Sitong successively. We stormed and wiped out the police and the Self-defence Corps in the former, and then attacked the lumber station in the latter and captured quantities of materials including provisions. We had an impressive meeting with lumberjacks. The workers who had been anxiously watching the distant mountains of the guerrilla zone enveloped in powder smoke were very delighted to see us.

After our political work among the workers, we started on our way home with some workers who volunteered to carry the spoils. Meanwhile the enemy had rushed to Liangshuiquanzi hearing of the incident. But before getting there they heard of the attack on Beifengwudong and Sitong and were stunned and flurried. They trembled with fear and uneasiness, hardly knowing when they would be hit and where.

The enemy's iron ring around the guerrilla zone had loosened. We easily broke through the encirclement, which we had crawled through on the belly on the way to the enemy rear.

The companies remaining in the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone in cooperation with the AJSDC and other paramilitary organizations had evacuated the people from the zone to Shiliping, while holding the enemy in check stubbornly.

In accordance with the great leader's teaching they had wiped out the attacking enemy with ambush and luring tactics. At night they had staged constant attacks on the enemy's camps and convoys, giving them not a moment's respite. The enemy could not advance even a step from his former lines. The traces of hard-fought battle were found everywhere.

After a few days' separation the guerrillas both in the zone and from the enemy rear had an impressive reunion. Their joy was infinite after their actions decisive for the future of the guerrilla zone.

The weapons, ammunition, provisions and shoes captured at the enemy rear were distributed among both the guerrillas and the people in the zone. A fresh fighting spirit pervaded all over the zone.

The great leader who had proved the correctness of the behind-the-enemy-lines harassing operations in action, ordered all the guerrilla zones to harry the enemy rear decisively. This operation was conducted with added intensity.

Having harassed and wiped out the enemy near Xiaomingyuegou and Yanji city, the AJPGA in the Yanji guerrilla zone ambushed the enemy in Jiqingling and Longshuiping which were the main route for the "punitive forces", dealing him a staggering blow. In Hunchun area the enemy forces were raided in Guanmenzuizi, and in Helong County Sanhecun was attacked and other operations conducted to harass the enemy rear.

The enemy was completely put on the defensive and thrown into utter confusion. Voices were raised among the enemy's military authorities demanding the reexamination of the "winter punitive operation".

In order to give no breathing space to the confounded enemy troops and decisively smash their "punitive" plot, the great leader planned continued heavy blows at the enemy. He himself led his men to Nammulgol some 20 kilometres off Macun and cleaned up the Self-defence Corps in a twinkling, and advanced his unit to Wangqing

(Daduchuan). He intended to attack Wangqing city, the stronghold of the "punitive forces". Wangqing, a big county seat, was a logistic base and major military centre of the "punitive operations" against the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone. Many families of the officers of the "punitive forces" were residing there. Therefore, an attack on this city meant a decisive blow at the key point of the enemy.

We went a long way round Jiapigou and reached the hill behind Wangqing. Though their rear had been attacked successively the enemy was loose in the defence of Wangqing in the belief that the guerrillas would not advance up to the city.

With his men, the great leader descended the hill into the city.

It was around one o'clock at night. Acting on the order for attack we assaulted the police station and set fire to the enemy organs, arsenals and dumps of war supplies. As the warehouses of the "punitive forces" were packed to capacity, many of the war supplies were heaped outside.

In a moment tongues of flames shot up everywhere and the whole city was turned into shambles. We calmly got out of the city and ascended the hill on the way to Yaoyinggou.

As was expected by the great leader the attack on Wangqing city was a decisive blow at the enemy's "punitive operations". The enemy was thrown into utter chaos. Despite their prolonged siege-and-attack operation the enemy failed to advance even a step, and now his rear became insecure. At length the enemy withdrew, with the tents pulled down and war supplies carted out from the valleys and foothills in the guerrilla zone.

By combining the positive defence of the guerrilla zone with bold operations to harass the enemy rear, the great leader brought about a decisive turn in this phase of war and inflicted an ignominious setback on the enemy's "winter punitive operations".

We carried the day and the guerrilla zone was made safe. The joy and pride of the AJPGA and the people were inexpressible, because they defeated the large-scale "punitive operations" in which the enemy had carried out massacre and destruction by the most barbarous means of war with the mobilization of largest-ever armed forces, bringing untold sufferings and severe ordeals to the people in the guerrilla zone throughout the winter.

The unbounded pride in having the respected leader Comrade

Kim Il Sung, a great military strategist and ever-victorious, iron-willed brilliant commander, and the unshaken faith that we could win certain victory as long as we were under his wise leadership swelled the hearts of all the members of the AJPGA and the people in the guerrilla zones as well as the entire people in the semi-guerrilla zones and the enemy-held areas.

(2) THE FRUSTRATION OF THE "SIEGE-AND-ATTACK" OPERATIONS

In the crucible of fierce battles, the AJPGA grew exceedingly strong both politically and militarily and its ranks expanded rapidly.

At the beginning of March 1934 the great leader put forward the line of reorganizing the AJPGA into the Korean People's Revolutionary Army (KPRA). It was a revolutionary line for revamping the AJPGA's organizational and commanding system so that a unified command over the expanded and strengthened guerrilla units could be tightened so as to augment our revolutionary armed forces in scope and strength, increase their combat capacity markedly and counter the large-scale offensives of Japanese imperialism more positively.

Under his sagacious guidance the work to reorganize the AJPGA into the KPRA was carried out successfully in a brief span of time in all the Tuman River guerrilla zones.

An organizational and political work was conducted briskly among the guerrillas and the people, and amid heightened revolutionary enthusiasm, the birth of the KPRA was met significantly by its members with fresh successes in battles and by the people with their positive assistance to the army.

The KPRA consisted of divisions and independent regiments. A division had regiments under it, to which companies belonged without the institution of a battalion.

The respected leader designated a company as a basic combat unit which was able to perform an independent combat action while ensuring

prompt concentration and dispersion to fit in with the guerrilla warfare and formed platoons and squads under a company.

He established a well-knit Party and YCLK organizational system inside the army and set up political departments in each unit.

The reorganization of the AJPGA into the KPRA was an epoch-making event of great significance in the strengthening and development of the anti-Japanese armed struggle and marked a brilliant milestone in the history of our people's revolutionary armed forces.

In mid-March of the same year he transferred the headquarters of the revolution from Macun in Xiaowangqing to Yaoyinggou. Under the obtaining situation it was more favourable for guidance to the revolutionary struggle as a whole.

The KPRA which had been tempered in battles and grown stronger through its reorganization dealt a powerful blow at the enemy's new offensives from the start, and firmly defended the gains of the revolution which had been won with blood.

The enemy who had sustained crushing setbacks even in their "winter mopping operations" noisily vaunted as the "last sweeping operation" became further flustered in face of our ever-growing revolutionary forces.

The enemy made a fuss, looking into the cause and responsibility for their setback and held one confabulation after another to reexamine the "punitive" tactics and brew more vicious schemes. In the end a new "punitive" plan called the "siege-and-attack operation" took shape in the name of the "final operation". It was a downright plan to "strike out" the guerrilla zones once and for all by combining military seige-and-attack operation with political suppression and economic blockade.

The enemy's intention was to lay an all-round siege around the guerrilla zones with huge armed forces, make step-by-step inroad with prolonged "punitive operations" and strike them out in the end. They called it "stronghold tactics for step-by-step capture".

Besides, they tried to enforce political and economic blockade against the zones by establishing "concentration villages" and enforcing the "collective watch system".

According to this stratagem from spring in 1934, "crack" units of the Kwantung Army and units of the Japanese Army stationed in Korea were brought in increasing number to the neighbourhood of the guerrilla zones

and the puppet Manchukuo Army was reinforced rapidly. In the latter half of 1934, the enemy armed forces massed near the zones surpassed 20,000 men. The numerical strength of the police and the Self-defence Corps increased largely and their arms improved considerably.

In early 1934 in order to use the puppet Manchukuo police more effectively, the Police Affairs Division was established in the Japanese Embassy in Manchukuo, to tighten the control over the Manchukuo police and the police was equipped with mortars of small calibre, floodlights, hand-grenade throwers and machine guns.

In an effort to ferret out the KPRA men and political workers active among the people, the enemy established in spring of the same year an espionage organization called the "special round-up corps" under the command of the Kwantung Army headquarters. They pushed ahead more viciously their policy of establishing "concentration villages" to cut off the kindred ties between the KPRA men and the people. Under their sanguinary coercion many such villages were set up near the Tuman River guerrilla zones and their number reached 1,172 in 1935. The farm-houses scattered over the mountain area were all burned down, and the Korean peasants who had eked out their living on slash-and-burn cultivation, hunting or charcoal making were deprived of their small means of living and herded into these villages which were no better than the concentration camps.

Strong walls were built around each such village and batteries erected at its four corners. Then it was surrounded by a deep ditch and double or treble barbed wire entanglements and log hedge.

In addition 50-100 policemen and Self-defence Corps members equipped with rifles and light machine guns were stationed in each village.

The medieval ruling methods such as the "collective watch system" and the "ten-household involvement law" were applied to bind the people hand and foot.

Under the "collective watch system" (*baojia* system) ten families were organized into a group called "*pai*", ten of these groups constituted a "*jia*", several of which in turn constituted a "*bao*" under the control and supervision of a police station chief. The "ten-household involvement law" is a vicious one under which if a member of the "*pai*" violated the

"*law*", the households he belonged to were all held responsible and punished.

By the establishment of the "concentration villages" and the "*baojia* system", the enemy attempted to quickly find out and suppress any slight "disturbing" elements, make the people spy and inform on each other to hold in check their unity.

Economic blockade against the guerrilla zones was tightened as never before. In order to prevent their material assistance to the KPRA, the "concentration villages" were brought under strict control, the bodies and packages of those going in and out of the villages were searched and surprise search was made on houses to take away provisions and daily necessities. All the peddlers near the guerrilla zones were registered and their business investigated and controlled.

Moreover, in order to ensure the manoeuvrability of the enemy's military action, military roads were expanded in a big way and two and three communication networks, including the guard telephone line, laid in the police stations and substations and even in the Self-defence Corps stationed in the concentration village.

Due to the desperate manoeuvres of the enemy, the situation of the guerrilla zones became extremely difficult. The activities of the political workers and underground revolutionary organizations in the enemy-held areas became tougher, and the assistance to the guerrilla zones from the semi-guerrilla zones and the occupied districts was severely restricted.

Under the tense conditions where the enemy were planning "siege-and-attack operation", the great leader taught the units of the KPRA to concentrate on the defence of the guerrilla zones and, at the same time, to conduct large-scale operations to strike successively at the enemy's military and political bases in the rear to forestall their machinations, while building new guerrilla zones in more favourable areas.

It was the wisest policy aimed at positively tiding over the difficult situation, consolidating the victory won with blood and maintaining the heightened revolutionary spirit of the people.

He led the KPRA units first to spring offensives to mount successive attacks on the enemy troops dispersed around the guerrilla zones with our concentrated forces and thus baffle their plan for new offensives, and thus keep up the morale of the guerrillas to go over to summer offensives.

Under his personal command the unit to which I (O Jin U) belonged fought victorious battles in Tianqiaoling, Zhuanjiaolou and other places and went over to summer offensives with elation.

The summer offensives were aimed at forestalling the enemy's preparations for "siege-and-attack operations" in the northeast of the Wangqing guerrilla zone and Antu district and creating advantageous conditions for the formation of a new guerrilla zone.

The most typical battle in these offensives was one fought in Luozigou in June of the same year under the command of the respected leader.

Luozigou was an enemy's key military point leading to Baicaogou, Wangqing County, and Dongning county seat. Starting the "siege-and-attack operations", the enemy hurled more than 800 troops there.

Originally it had been revolutionized long before thanks to the activities of the units of the KPRA and the political workers. But as a result of the deployment of large enemy forces and the intensified suppression, its conditions were very hard.

This walled city was surrounded by barbed wire and grooves. A strong battery with mortars and other powerful weapons was built in its west hill, and provisions and other military supplies were laid in stock. Indeed, Luozigou was a military base which had been flaunted as an "impregnable fortress".

In the latter part of June we under the great leader's command reached a village called Sandaohezi near Luozigou. Soon the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units led by Brigade Commander Shi, Commanders Chai, Li Sanxia and Kong arrived in Sidaohezi in the vicinity of Sandaohezi.

The respected leader had invited these units to the Luozigou Battle, and the chiefs of these units readily accepted his invitation, because they had found the advantage of joint operations under his command in the attack on Dongning county seat.

Having found out that a large armed force of the KPRA and the combined Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units was on the move under the great leader's command, the enemy got flurried and fortified the defences of Luozigou, while setting in motion more than 500 troops to attack Sandaohezi and forestall us.

The great leader saw through the enemy's moves. He left some troops of his unit in this village to lure the enemy and moved its main forces to the west of the village.

It was most favourable for us to hit the attacking enemy, by relying on the village. Yet it might cause losses to the villagers. So he wanted to wipe out the enemy in the flat plain west of the village.

Under his command our forces lay in ambush for action in the hill west of the village.

When the enemy troops arrived at the entrance of the village, our decoy party fired some shots as it slowly withdrew from the village, thus luring the enemy into the flat place.

When the enemy was within range, the great leader ordered: "Fire!" Volley firing took place. The enemy who were pursuing the decoy party were mowed down in an instant, not knowing where bullets flew from. Their column was disarrayed and officers and men tried to seek shelter.

After a long while, their disordered ranks were reorganized and started a counterattack. Believing in their numerical strength, the enemy pressed on desperately.

Having taken in the situation, the great leader sent an orderly to Sidaohezi where the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units were massed, telling them to hit the enemy from behind so as to wipe them out by flank-attack tactics.

Before these units arrived, enemy reinforcements came, and seized Sandaohezi, and offered tough resistance from behind the walls of farm-houses and the furniture of the people. The battle dragged on unexpectedly and became unfavourable for us.

Under these circumstances, the great leader ordered his men to withdraw a short distance. Our unit pulled back westward. As he had anticipated, the enemy came out from the village into the field, believing that we were retreating.

When the enemy were lured into a place favourable for us and being slashed, shots cracked out and shouts went up from behind their ranks. The Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units from Sidaohezi began to hit at the rear of the enemy.

The great leader lost no time to issue an order to charge.

A bugle sounded which was responded by a lusty clarion for charge

from behind the enemy. The Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units came on the double. Shouts of "hurrah" filled the air. Each time our bayonets glittered and the rifle butts were raised high, the enemy troops gave a shriek.

When the battle was over, rain came down in torrents. Dusk fell. The enemy fell back to Luozigou.

Though the weather was nasty, the great leader ordered the units to make a dash at Luozigou in the sustained spirits for attack.

Under his command the combined units marched forward in defiance of the heavy rain.

Three groups were formed to attack the city. The first group consisting of the main forces of the KPRA was to capture the battery on the western hill and deal a decisive blow at the enemy's defensive system to create favourable conditions for the attacking units. The second one had to charge into the city through West Gate, smash the police station and join the third group in raiding the barracks of the Manchukuo Army. The task of the third group formed with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese forces was to storm into the city from south and north and, with the second group, besiege the enemy barracks on three sides, and some of its members were to support the units attacking the battery on the western hill and the city. Interception parties were sent in the directions of Laomuzhuhe, Taipinggou and Huapidianzi.

On the great leader's order the combined forces went into action.

The first attacking group went near the battery and the second stormed into the city on the quiet, seized the police station without so much as firing a shot and approached the barracks of the Manchukuo Army on schedule. The third group rushed into the city by way of south and north. Attacked from all sides, the enemy were placed in danger of collapse, yet desperately resisted, concentrating the fire from the batteries on the western hill and the castle walls on the city.

The first group availed itself of this opportunity to press on for attack on the battery on the hill.

But it was impossible to approach the battery as the fortification was strong, and machine guns were fired with intensity and hand grenades thrown out. Presently day broke.

When the enemy's resistance became tougher and our attack more

difficult, the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units wavered and proposed a retreat.

Under these circumstances, the great leader told the units of the KPRA to heighten their offensive spirits and set an example to the Chinese units.

He sent an orderly to the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units to advise them that to beat a retreat under these conditions was like leaving the units under the enemy's firing.

This brought these units to stick to the lines they held. Dusk set in.

The next day the battle became fiercer.

Informed of the dangerous situation in Luozigou, the confounded enemy sent in passenger planes, not military ones, to drop mortar shells. The batteries kept barking and mortar shells fell from the sky. There were tremendous explosions here and there and clouds of dust went up. Nothing was to be seen an inch ahead.

Having perceived that as time dragged on, the situation would become more unfavourable, the great leader ordered the KPRA to make an all-out charge. A resolute and decisive rush would reverse the situation.

Storming parties were organized to destroy the batteries.

At that time the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units began to vacillate again. When several troops of these units were killed by mortar shells, they were stunned and began to disperse.

The enemy went over to a counterattack under cover of machine guns.

The situation became critical, and every minute had to be utilized.

The great leader ordered the KPRA to make a resolute charge.

We sprang to our feet and pressed on the batteries.

The enemy who were focusing fire on the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units were scared out of their wits by our bold and swift attack, and desperately fired machine guns only when our storming party stuck close under the nose of the battery. But it was too late.

In the sustained spirit the storming party rushed at the battery, and captured what had been boastingly described as an "impregnable fort". A red flag fluttered atop the battery.

Thanks to the drastic command of the great leader the three-day long battle turned decisively favourable for our armed forces.

From the battery on the western hill our unit sent massive death to the counterattacking enemy.

The Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units which had been in a temporary confusion became invigorated at the sight of the red flag, pulled themselves up and went over to a positive offensive. The enemy were driven into the narrow barracks and offered no resistance.

Though the enemy planes and reinforcements were sent in, that did not help at all. The reinforcements were wiped out by our intercepting party on the road to Luozigou, which was brought under our complete control. People came out from all corners and welcomed us enthusiastically.

The KPRA's attack on Luozigou, the enemy's key point, dealt a knockout blow at their "siege-and-attack operation" and struck them with deep horror.

After this battle, the large and small "punitive forces" hanging about the guerrilla zones became enervated. They were petrified with fear, quite uncertain whether they might meet the same end, as the large forces in Luozigou had suffered a miserable defeat in their three-day-long desperate resistance with strong batteries.

This battle created favourable conditions for the expansion of the guerrilla zones by containing the enemy forces northeast of the Wangqing guerrilla zone, and consolidated the allied front with the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units.

After this battle, too, we in accordance with the great leader's operational policy conducted feverish military and political activities to frustrate the enemy's "siege-and-attack operations".

These activities included the battles fought at Daxinggou and Zaomiaotai in July of the same year under his command and the Dadianzi and Fuerhe Battles conducted by the independent regiment which had been dispatched to Antu on his order.

After these battles the demoralized enemy in the northeast of Wangqing and in Antu feared their possible encounter with the guerrillas. This virtually created a vacuum in the northeast of Wangqing and Antu district.

According to the respected leader's plan, measures were taken to move the revolutionary masses from the guerrilla zones which had been

target of the "siege-and-attack operations" into new favourable areas.

The evacuation of the people in the guerrilla zones started.

The people of Macun, Donglincun, Dawangqing and Shiliping in the Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone, the terrain of which the enemy was conversant with through their repeated offensives, moved into the Dahuangwai guerrilla zone. 150 families came here from the Yanji zone. The people in some of the villages in the Helong and Yanji zones were transferred to the Chechangzi zone and the people of Hunchun zone to Luozigou and Laoheishan.

The people worked unremittingly to build up their new guerrilla zones. As for the Dahuangwai and Yaoyinggou zones, there were a small number of farm-houses. Therefore, there were neither dwellings nor provisions for the thousands of people from the Xiaowangqing zone.

Everything should be started anew; log huts had to be built, fields cultivated and schools established. Many defensive installations should be erected to provide against the enemy's "punitive operations".

The Chechangzi guerrilla zone was in difficult conditions. In Dahuangwai and Yaoyinggou zones there were a few peasant houses. But the Chechangzi zone was a desert without any farmers' huts or other things like temples.

Therefore the land was cleared of the huge trees to build houses and Children's Corps schools. Old tree stumps were dug out to cultivate fields, and stones heaped and trenches dug at key points.

Soon the life of the people there began to be stable and the guerrilla zones turned into strong forts.

Ony day in July of the same year, the respected leader visited the Dahuangwai guerrilla zone. Though busy in directing attacks on the enemy's rendezvous and military trains so as to foil their "siege-and-attack operations", he had come a long way to see to people's life in the new guerrilla zones and the defensive installations.

Forgetting the fatigue of long travel through the powder smoke he looked round the newly cultivated fields and log huts and went to Village No. 3.

As many people came to settle, new villages appeared in different places in this zone, and were given numbers for convenience's sake. Army barracks were in Village No. 1 and the People's Revolutionary

Government in Village No. 3.

At the happy news of his visit, people flocked to Village No. 3 from Nos. 1, 2 and 4.

The people were highly delighted and excited to see him. They had longed for him, the lodestar of the nation, even in dream.

After exchanging greetings with the people, he warmly comforted them for their hard life in an alien land.

Presently he went into the log hut which housed the office of the Dahuangwai People's Revolutionary Government and heard detailed reports on the conditions in the zone from the government officials and the chiefs of the revolutionary organizations.

By that time the life in the zone had become stable in the main. All the people had their own houses, though not good, and planted vegetables and mushrooms in the kitchen plots. Potato and maize were growing in the newly cultivated fields.

A hospital, a tailor shop and a gunsmith shop were built in a deep valley leading to Yanji. Strong defensive installations were laid round the corner of the road to Yanji and Wangqing. Upholding his will, the people of Dahuangwai had done a great deal of work in a brief time.

He was very satisfied with the conditions here, and said:

"You have done a great deal of work in a short time. Look, you can do anything once you are determined to do it.

"A revolutionary village appeared in the valley formerly overgrown with trees and dilapidated land turned into crop-land, didn't it?

"We, however, cannot rest on our laurels.

"Since the enemy persists in his plan of 'siege-and-attack operations', you ought to make the guerrilla zone impregnable and look after the people's life responsibly."

He dwelt on what should be done in future and earnestly said that since revolution was for the sake of people it was necessary to work with them in harmony and win over more of them to the side of the revolution.

Even after his talk, he did not find any time to have a short rest, but corrected defects point by point as he made a round of the barracks in Village No. 1, and the gunsmith shop, hospital and publishing shop.

In the evening, he saw an art performance arranged by the Children's Corps and left Dahuangwai.

After his visit the look of this guerrilla zone changed beyond recognition.

In all units and posts strenuous efforts were made to put his teachings into practice, and the zone was converted into a reliable fortress strong enough to smash the enemy's "siege-and-attack operations".

The great leader's tactical and strategic line to provide against these enemy operations was brilliantly realized not only in Dahuangwai but also in all other zones. The newly established Chechangzi zone, to say nothing of the already fortified Yaoyinggou zone, became a fortress strong enough to prevent the enemy's attack.

With the establishment of new zones, the enemy's "siege-and-attack operations" were doomed to total failure.

Due to the evacuation of the guerrilla zones the enemy had to quit the Xiaowangqing, Yanji and Helong zones which they had closely encircled, resorting to the "tactics of step-by-step capturing". Their encircling net which had been in existence for several months became useless and great confusion took place among the enemy.

The great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung lost no time in ordering the KPRA's attack on the rear of the enemy.

From the autumn of 1934 to the beginning of the next year, operations for harassing the enemy's rear were conducted scores of times so as to bring final defeat to the enemy's "siege-and-attack operations".

The typical operations were the battle at Xiaochengzi in September 1934, attack on the "concentration villages" in Dahuanggou and Beihamatang in September and October, assaults on Badaogou and Weizigou, raid on the Changchun-Tumen train, attack on Laotougou, Mingyuegou, Chetiaogou and Zhongqinggou.

These powerful offensives stunned the enemy. Especially the puppet Manchukuo troops trembled with terror, grew war-weary and deserted one after another.

Having studied these trends, the great leader instructed the KPRA and the revolutionary organizations to further disorganize the enemy from within so as to detach the puppet Manchukuo Army from the Japanese aggressor army.

Many political workers were sent to operate inside the units of the puppet army and carry on political propaganda briskly everywhere.

This made the puppet army feel it a disgrace to be a shield for the Japanese aggressor army and avoided encounters with us more often than not. Some units came over to our side and others supplied us with weapons and ammunition, firing blind shots in battles. Some officers informed us of the enemy movements and many soldiers laid down arms and deserted in groups.

The enemy forces were greatly weakened and demoralized. They sustained a severe defeat, without bringing their "siege-and-attack operations" to success.

The guerrilla zones were firmly defended from the enemy's "final punitive operations", and relying on this indestructible fortress, our revolutionary forces grew stronger as days went by.

(3) CONSTANT CARE FOR THE PEOPLE IN GUERRILLA ZONES

In the days of fierce battles to defend the guerrilla zones from the incessant enemy offensives the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung always showed deep concern and warm loving care for the people in the zones.

The enemy's large-scale "winter punitive operations" that lasted for nearly 90 days brought them untold sufferings and difficulties.

Using the "scorched-earth tactics" of burning all and killing all, the enemy reduced the villages in the zones to ashes and murdered the people right and left.

A terrible disaster took place, for example, in Village No. 6, Xiaowangqing zone, where all inhabitants were massacred by the enemy.

Houses, provisions and household articles were burned down, they were left empty-handed in the snow-covered forests. Most of them were old people, women, children and invalids.

How to defend these numerous people against the enemy's bayonets and save them from severe winter cold and terrible hunger?

Under the dangerous conditions of the incessant attacks of the

"punitive forces" it was difficult and risky to defend their lives and guarantee their welfare.

Anywhere and any time, however, the respected leader thought first of the people in the zones and their safety, and for this, he braved dangers to bear the brunt of severe battles.

It happened in early winter when the enemy troops were swarming into the Xiaowangqing valley after breaking through Mt. Bbyojok line.

Having received an urgent report of the enemy's movement the great leader moved the people from Macun district to Dalishugou before he organized a battle to keep the enemy at bay.

He sent the guerrillas on combat mission, and came out with a unit. But he stopped at the sight of the last column of people still moving round the bend of the mountain.

The enemy troops were close at hand. If they reached this line, the slow-moving people might be pursued.

After a moment's thought he hurriedly advanced his men on to Hill 715 behind Macun. His plan was to hold in check the attacking enemy and gain time for the people to evacuate. He was ready to lead his small armed force to a decisive battle.

Looking up with reverence to the lofty figure of the respected leader who was going to lead a hard battle to guarantee the people's evacuation in safety, I (O Baek Ryong) took my position on the hill to wipe out the enemy.

The battle was very fierce as we had expected.

In defiance of the hail of bullets, the great leader victoriously guided the battle, firing at the enemy troops in person. The enemy's attack was foiled, our defensive line sustained and the people moved to a safe place without exception.

It was not an isolated case.

The battles conducted by the AJPGA under his command were all linked with the work for safeguarding the people. These battles were not merely actions for defeating the enemy but operations for defending the people, while fighting back the enemy, and vice versa.

It was much more tough and complex to crush the enemy while protecting the people under urgent and unfavourable conditions. In this

case, however, the great leader had taken more prudent measures to cover the people.

As the frenzied enemy attack on the Xiaowangqing zone reached a climax toward the end of 1933, the respected leader rescued more than 1,500 people from danger through determined actions and careful measures.

He and a unit of the AJPGA were in Lishugou valley where people had flocked from Macun, Donglincun and the entrance to Dawangqing.

Though no one knew how they got wind of it, the enemy troops surged into the valley. An enemy unit came along the mountain ridge in front of Lishugou from Tokgol and another rank from the direction of Qiuyuegou in an effort to attack the village from behind and front.

The situation was critical, and there was no time to waste. The guerrillas wanted the great leader to leave the place quickly in the interests of his safety.

Yet, he ordered the guerrillas to take positions quickly at the foot of the mountain before Lishugou to block the enemy's advance from Tokgol. His intention was to gain time for the people to escape safely in such a critical condition.

When the guerrillas started out, he told the members of the revolutionary organizations and the AJSDC to evacuate the people quickly to Dawangqing knoll, leaving the critically ill, the old and infirm in the Lishugou valley. He even indicated where the remainder should seek refuge.

It was a most elaborate measure for evacuation.

He knew that the sick and the old and infirm would only delay the evacuation of the healthy people.

He also believed that when most of the sound people had slipped out, it would be quite possible for the remaining behind to move to a safe place, dodging the watchful eyes of the enemy.

On his order the armymen and people went into action at once.

We ran up the foothill in front of Lishugou as fast as our legs could carry us, because only when we occupied it before the enemy was it possible to fight back on favourable conditions and realize his design to safely evacuate the people. Though the enemy made repeated charges, none of his troops was allowed to come up.

While a fierce battle went on, the Lishugou valley was unoccupied. All the people had moved to Dawangqing hillock or into a thick forest.

After all this was confirmed the guerrillas were ordered to slip through the forest to the hillock.

Not knowing that we had withdrawn, the enemy wormed their way into the Lishugou valley from both sides when the "punitive forces" arrived from Qiuyuegou.

We were really elated as we pictured in our mind's eyes the enemy troops hanging around the deserted valley.

The battle was over and the people had slipped away safely, yet as instructed by the great leader, we remained with them till the next day.

Having mounted the Dawangqing hillock, we marched in the same direction taken by the people at an easy pace.

The people shuffled along, because they had been hungry for days and were exhausted in their escape from the valley.

Pitying with the hard conditions of the people, the great leader sent some guerrillas to Shiliping to procure food. And he told us to escort the slow-moving people to a safe place lest they should suffer from the enemy on their way.

When we had gone a short distance, the advance party returned with rice.

Since the quantity was small and there was no time to boil the rice, each one of them got as his share a handful of raw rice to eat, which though little gave them great strength, as it was a token of the warm feelings of the respected leader.

It was dusk when we reached our destination, Hamjigol. But he did not want to leave the people. Their hard condition held him up.

He called the officials of the revolutionary organizations and told them specifically how to bring back the refugees from Lishugou valley, and formed a small group of young people to transport the provisions cached in Xiaowangqing. His plan was that the guerrillas and transport corps make a breakthrough of the enemy lines and while the former lured the enemy the latter would dig out the provisions.

After spending the night with the people, he himself led the operation and directed a decoy group.

The enemy fell into our trap; they were enticed into the flat place in

Qiuyuegou and drawn away for a long while, until the food was transported and the refugees brought back from the Lishugou valley.

Thus, the utmost care of the great leader saved the people in Xiaowangqing guerrilla zone from danger.

To take measures first to defend the people when the enemy attacked and make arrangements to make their life stable when they withdrew—this was an iron rule he strictly observed in the hard battles in defence of the guerrilla zones.

Thanks to the positive and meticulous measures he had taken, the people could stubbornly withstand the severe trials of fierce battles, the enemy's barbarous outrages, ravenous hunger and biting cold, and meet the spring of 1934 with great hopes.

Though the enemy were at last driven away, it was not the end of calamities facing the people.

What was awaiting them when they returned with joyous victory to their villages was not their homes but a wilderness with ash dancing in the wind. What met their eyes was burned houses, destroyed utensils, wrecked farm implements... not a tree was left standing.

The people, however, were not dispirited or overwhelmed—"houses can be rebuilt and villages also reconstructed. As it is now getting warmer, there is no need to worry about the cold, and when fresh grass shoots up, hunger would be assuaged". The people rolled up their sleeves and set out to rebuild their life.

The first thing they did was to make preparations for farming.

Since those days when they had come to farm on their own land in the guerrilla zone thanks to the respected leader, the people had never allowed land to lie fallow.

The biggest problem now was how to get seeds. Yet they started to till by dragging the plough themselves, so as to get everything ready for sowing as soon as seeds were obtained, hoping against hope that they would get the seeds somehow.

Though the ploughing went ahead, there were yet no seeds, and the people began to lose heart. They tried to procure seeds from the enemy-held areas, but failed.

One day, the great leader visited Shiliping with more than 50

guerrillas to see how the peasants were making farming preparations with bare hands.

From the edge of a plot, he watched the peasants pulling the plough with a rope across their shoulders for a good while, and called them over. Only then they recognized him and competed to come along in a hurry.

The joy and excitement of the peasants meeting him whom they had ardently longed for even in the days of severest ordeals were beyond description. He gently held their hands in his, and feasted his eyes over the fields turned over with difficulty. He asked: **"It has been difficult to get seeds, I suppose. What are you going to plant here?"**

All remained silent, unable to answer, because they did not want to worry him about the seeds and farming conditions. But an old man stepped forward and said:

"Dear General, we decided to secure seeds by ourselves. We are now making furrows to plant the seeds as soon as we get them. Don't worry too much."

In the old man's words he discerned their strong will, and firm resolve and great confidence.

He told to the people present:

"The old man is right. In the recent Xiaowangqing Battle the Japanese imperialists had boasted that they would easily destroy the guerrilla zone by attacking it with a large force several thousand strong. But what came of it? Contrary to their expectations, victory was ours. The people who are determined to sacrifice even their lives without hesitation for the liberation of their country have an inexhaustible strength, and no force on earth can subdue it. Although difficulties stand in our way, we can fully tide them over, when all of us tackle them with strong will. The question is not what difficulty has cropped up but how strong the revolutionary will of the people to grapple with it. Today I have derived boundless strength and courage from the doggedness of the people in Shiliping."

After encouraging the peasants with deep trust, he headed for the village.

Deep in thought, he walked with heavy steps. None was better acquainted than he of the sufferings of the farmers without draught cattle and of the difficulties in obtaining seeds.

He sat down with the people without any ceremony and had a long

discussion on how to tide over the difficulties they were facing in their day-to-day life.

Meanwhile, the village women were eager to prepare food for the great leader who had come after a long time, but there was no rice.

Understanding the predicament of the women he asked his men to collect all the rice they had. It amounted to only a few bowlfuls.

Handing over the rice to the women he spoke out frankly: "Make gruel with this and a lot of wild vegetables. Then there will be good, delicious dish because wild herbs will flavour the rice."

Encouraged by his warm comfort, the women soon prepared rice and vegetable gruel.

They ladled out a bowl from the oven and offered it to him first. But he offered it to the oldest man and himself received the last bowl. Eating the gruel, he cheered them up, saying: "Now we do not have even enough of this thin gruel, but when our country is free, we will cultivate our own land in our own country as we wish and have all the rice we want. In order to hasten that day we should stoutly overcome all difficulties."

Appreciating his great concern shown in having offered the bowl of gruel first to the people, the villagers' hope of and faith in a happy morrow rose higher.

The village people asked him to have a good night's rest. But he declined with thanks, and left Shiliping. The villagers simply considered that the unit was leaving not to cause inconvenience to them. We, too, thought so, as we took leave.

When the unit came out of the village, he moved it to an enemy lumber station. Then we came to understand why we had left the village in the evening.

After his conversation with the Shiliping peasants, he had mapped out a plan to raid an enemy lumber station to help improve their hard conditions where there were a lot of cattle and provisions. We wiped out the enemy and captured a lot of grains and, wheat flour and many draught cattle.

On his instructions, all this was equally distributed among the villages in the zone.

When the guerrillas drove several carts and draught cattle into Shiliping, the people came out to wave at us, thinking that we were passing

through carrying the loot to our unit.

To their surprise, however, the carts halted in the heart of the village. The people surrounded the guerrillas, without knowing what was going to happen.

One of the guerrillas stepped out and said they were seeds and provisions sent by the respected General. Shouts of joy went up. Hardly knowing what was happening beyond their wildest dreams, the people hugged the guerrillas and stroked the cattle and seed bags, with tears in their eyes.

Not only Shiliping but all other villages in the zone were swept with waves of emotion and joy.

Moved deeply by his deep concern, the people hurried up with their work. New houses were built where the enemy had burned down everything, and rich crops were raised where everything had been desolated.

The great leader's love and solicitude for the people knew no bounds. He not only freed them from the worries about food, clothing, housing and farming but also opened for them a life full of hope and confidence, of knowledge, song and sports.

No matter how hard the conditions, he saw that the people in the zones would enjoy the New Year's Day, Autumn Festival and other holidays, and grand functions were organized to commemorate May Day and other revolutionary anniversaries.

Gala days had long been monopolized by the rich and influential, but they were a source of grief and agony to the poor who could not afford a meal to their children, to say nothing of special food.

The people in the zones had forgotten the joy of holidays. Now they came to enjoy the festivals for the first time, finding their life worth living, and shed tears of happiness.

During the enemy's stepped-up "punitive operations" there could be no thought of holidays, nor did they have time to enjoy. The officials of the revolutionary organizations, too, regarded it as unrevolutionary to hold fetes when the situation was tense.

The respected leader, however, corrected their wrong understanding and encouraged the people to enjoy holidays even under hard conditions.

He said: **"Our objective is not just bloody struggle but freeing the country from enemy occupation, making the people better off and having the lost holidays once again. If holidays are not enjoyable in the guerrilla zones where people are masters simply because their conditions are a bit hard, it is not the attitude of communists to give them up."** Thus advising the officials, he organized preparations for festivals.

On the eve of New Year's Day, peasants snared or trapped animals, and enemy convoys and lumber depots were attacked to obtain special food as well as shoes and stage costumes for the Children's Corps. Art performance, athletic meets and other functions were organized, and on revolutionary holidays, commemorative meetings and lectures were held.

Thanks to the infinite care of the great leader, on May Day in 1934, commemorative meetings, athletic meets, art performance and other grand functions took place in all guerrilla zones along the Tuman River. In autumn of the same year the International Proletarian Youth Day (first Sunday of September) was celebrated.

All these commemorative functions greatly inspired and enhanced the faith of the people not only in the guerrilla zones but in the semi-guerrilla zones and the enemy-held areas in the victory of the revolution and in their own strength and courage.

The grandest and most significant of all was the International Proletarian Youth Day celebration held in Yaoyinggou in the presence of the respected leader.

Due to the large-scale "punitive campaigns", the conditions in the guerrilla zone were very hard. But he had made preparations long in advance to celebrate the Youth Day grandly so as to envigorate the people and wipe out the hangdog looks of the people due to the adversity.

On his order we fought battles in Sanchakou and other places to obtain necessary material for the celebrations, and captured tens of cartfuls of provisions, silk and cotton fabrics, serge and other textiles and a variety of goods.

He set up a preparatory committee to make sure that the trophies of war were sent to the people of Yaoyinggou and other villages in the zone.

Soon the preparatory committee formed with members of the revolutionary organizations grasped the actual conditions of the people

and issued them materials according to their age, sex and number of each household.

Silk cloth was used in making stage costume for the members of the Children's Corps, and different hues of silk cloth was supplied to women according to their age.

Prior to the celebrations the tailor shop and the Women's Association worked day and night to make different types of clothes.

When the women felt the bright silk cloth, and made dresses for the first time in their life, they said with tears in their eyes: "Dear General gives us silk dress." When they were in the prime of youth, cotton clothes were all that they had, and they could not even afford to put a gauze ribbon in their long plaited hair. How could they appreciate his favour without tears?

As the anniversary drew nearer, Yaoyinggou became more animated. A spacious playground was laid out on the knoll behind the village, and houses were kept clean and tidy to accommodate the people from the enemy-held areas and the semi-guerrilla zones.

The great leader had invited the representatives of the people in these areas so as to show them a worthy life in the guerrilla zone and give them encouragement and faith.

A huge pine arch was built in the playground, and posters and slogans were pasted on the notice boards set up in a line from the arch.

An art performance was arranged by the AJPGA and the Children's Corps. Rice cakes were made and cattle slaughtered.

The anniversary came.

The representatives arrived from the neighbouring semi-guerrilla zones and enemy-held areas such as Jiguanlazi, Yongbilazi, Tianqiaoling and Zhuanjiaolou and many people came from other villages in the guerrilla zone.

The village was bedecked with gala attire, drums were beaten, songs rang out and laughter and cheers filled the air.

From early morning people flocked to the meeting place. Many multihued buntings set up around the ground were flattering in an early autumn wind. The members of the Children's Corps were in colourful stage dress, and all the people in the zone were clad in new attire.

The vast playground, bright with a September morning sun, was literally a sea of flowers.

The representatives were moved with admiration. Earlier they had been entertained with meat soup and rice at their lodgings.

They thought they did not deserve such a treatment under the actual conditions of the zone. Therefore, they were surprised and at the same time felt grateful.

The scene of the playground was splendid. The spacious meeting place, the gorgeous dresses, the bright countenances and vigorous features—all this was an inspiring sight, and an object of envy.

A fit of enthusiastic cheers broke out from the bustling place.

"Hurrah! Hurrah! Hurrah!"

The people raised shouts of surging emotion and joy as they welcomed the great sun of the nation Comrade Kim Il Sung who had given them a real life and happiness.

Acknowledging the enthusiastic cheers, he mounted the platform, followed by the officials of the People's Revolutionary Government and the revolutionary organizations.

When a Yongil Bomb exploded, announcing the opening of a mass meeting, everybody welcomed it with loud applause.

The great leader made an important speech at the meeting.

When he mounted the rostrum, the audience stirred up like violent waves and stormy applause went up.

"Long live General Kim Il Sung!"

"Long live the Korean revolution!"

The people shouted *"manse"* at top pitch voicing their deepest adoration for the respected leader.

He raised his hand in answer to the cheering crowd and began to deliver a historic speech.

Having analysed the situation obtaining at home and abroad, he appreciated the great combat results of the KPRA and the heightened morale of the people, and bitterly denounced Japanese imperialism for its frenzied moves to strike out the guerrilla zones.

He then advanced the tasks for fighting back the enemy's new offensives. He said that the fighting capacity of the KPRA should be raised constantly to deal a more powerful blow at the enemy, all the

people's defensive system strengthened in the zones, assistance to the People's Revolutionary Army increased and a massive struggle against Japanese imperialism be waged more vigorously.

At the end of his speech, loud cheers and enthusiastic applause went up again and lasted long.

The meeting was followed by a grand demonstration of the people in the zone.

After a short interval, an art performance was put on the stage. The curtain rose on a chorus of the Fifth Company, followed by songs and dances of the Children's Corps members, martial dances of the People's Revolutionary Army men, and other items—all of which were wildly acclaimed.

A mass dance ended the performance. More than 1,000 participated, singing a merry dance music to the accompaniment of harmonicas played by guerrillas. The playground was pervaded with revolutionary passion and optimistic mood, with infinite joy and emotion.

It was an epitome of the hopeful life the people in the zone were leading under the loving care of the respected leader, and a great demonstration of the fortitude maintained at the guerrilla zone, the land of revolution, where the people were masters.

The enemy had thought that the guerrilla zone would never rise up from the ruins where everything had been burned down and destroyed, and that even if it did so, it would be powerless.

The flames could not kill nor the ashes smother it.

The zone rose up determinedly and was showing a strong might under the warm rays of love shed by the respected leader who always thought first of the people in the zone and devotedly worked for their good.

4. ORDEALS TIDED OVER

(1) IN SNOW-COVERED NORTH MANCHURIA

In mid-February 1935 the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung returned to the Yaoyinggou guerrilla zone from his campaign in north Manchuria.

With tears in our eyes we (O Jin U and O Baek Ryong) welcomed him, as we had been humiliated and persecuted by the national chauvinists and sectarian-flunkeys.

The excitement and delight of our reunion was infinite. In the evening we heard unforgettable happenings in the campaign from Company Commander Han Hung Gwon who had taken part in this operation. The great leader was also present on the occasion.

It was towards the end of October 1934 that he set out on expedition to north Manchuria, at the head of the KPRA units.

The purpose of this campaign was to assist the fledgling guerrilla units in the Ningan area which was being desperately attacked by the enemy, raise the militant morale of the people and study the local conditions.

The new-born guerrilla units were active in Ningan area in north Manchuria. These units were novices in guerrilla warfare and insecure in their mass basis. The enemy made concentrated attacks on them in an effort to prevent the flames of the revolution from spreading to north Manchuria. They were well aware that if the guerrilla activities were intensified in the Ningan area, a breakthrough would be made in their "siege-and-attack operations" against the Tuman River guerrilla zones.

The enemy rapidly deployed their "punitive forces" including the vicious Jingan Army units from as far as Jinzhou and mounted one attack

after another on these young guerrilla units, never allowing them to build their bases.

In addition to their weak mass basis and the unsettled condition of their bases, the concentrated attacks of the superior enemy threw the guerrilla units into a very difficult situation; they had to fight hard battles, moving from one forest into another.

Having learned of the situation in the Ningan area the great leader quickly formed an expeditionary force to north Manchuria so as to render assistance.

This was made up of specially chosen companies from each of the KPRA units in Wangqing, Yanji and Hunchun. These companies were comprised of veteran fighters and most experienced political workers.

He explained the purpose of the expedition to this combat-ready force and ordered it to start out.

The expeditionary force crossed the rugged Laoye Range crowned with white snow, with blizzards raging at night. It, however, did not slacken its march but forced its way into the Ningan area and launched brisk military and political actions.

Unaware that the KPRA had got across the Laoye Range into Ningan, the enemy encountered it in high spirits, taking it for a local guerrilla unit or mountain rebels which they used to meet in this area before.

As they were numerically superior and deployed all over the place, the enemy forces converged on the spot the moment a gun report was heard.

But the great leader smashed the onrushing enemy troops by employing diverse tactics including clever decoy operation, ambush and attack from both flanks.

Only when mopping-up operations were repeated, did the enemy realize that a new guerrilla force had appeared in the Ningan area.

"Fresh guerrilla unit. Which unit is it?" the enemy wondered in confusion.

At last the enemy managed to find out that the KPRA force under the command of the great leader had advanced into north Manchuria, and raised a hue and cry for reinforcements.

On the other hand, the glorious combat results scored by the

expeditionary force led by him gave rise to legendary stories which spread among the people of north Manchuria: "By employing magic, General Kim Il Sung leads his small unit always to victory."—"In Hengdaohezi the Japanese punitive forces attacked the guerrillas from the front and rear. But the guerrillas became invisible and bullets flew in from somewhere, killing the punitive troops."

While strengthening military and political actions, the great leader sent out messengers to find out the local guerrilla units, with which he established contacts.

He actively involved the local guerrillas in each battle and political work to teach them the tactical principle of guerrilla warfare and the way of conducting political activities.

The guerrillas here were highly delighted with his brilliant guidance.

Among the local guerrillas there were many former members of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, and they voiced unbounded respect for him, saying:

"We still remember the attack on the Dongning county seat. Such a big operation was made possible thanks to Commander Kim Il Sung."

Since they had suffered greatly at the hands of the "punitive forces", they were determined to pay them back dearly when the great leader was staying here.

The morale of the local guerrillas was sky-high and their determination was put to the test soon.

Having sustained successive setbacks at the hands of the expeditionary force, the enemy remained quiet for some time. Soon the 200-strong garrison stationed at Beichagou was hurled into the "punitive operation". Knowing that we were operating in Fangshanggou near Nanhutou, the garrison troops came across Lake Jingbo by boat. Its intention was to make a landing on the quiet and attack us by surprise from behind.

However, their boats were spotted by our vigilant observation post.

Having received the report from the lookout post, the great leader observed that the enemy was coming into a trap on his own, and quickly deployed his men on a rise by the lake. The local guerrillas, too, took their positions.

Saying that the enemy should be wiped out before landing, he issued

an order to fire just as they neared the bank of the lake.

It was a rare guerrilla action. This was the first opportunity for our guerrillas, used to fight in the forests, to shoot at the boats on the water, and it was as easy as to hit at a target on their own palms. Every shot hit the target. The enemy troops in the boats had nowhere to hide, and leaned to this or that side only to get mowed down. Some villains jumped into the water to escape death, but our bullets never missed them.

The limpid water of the lake shining like a mirror was dyed red.

It was a really thrilling battle.

Our forces won a brilliant victory in this action: more than 200 Japanese garrison troops were sent to the bottom of the lake, and three machine guns and upwards of 100 rifles captured.

The expeditionary force dealt the enemy staggering blows everywhere in the Ningan area and provided favourable conditions for the local guerrillas to contain the enemy.

Most of the captured arms were handed over to the guerrillas here and crack members of the expeditionary force were sent to reinforce their ranks.

Having achieved the purpose of his north Manchurian expedition, the great leader started back to the Tuman River guerrilla zone toward the end of the same year. On the way back home, the expeditionary force had to face an unexpected trial.

After the main force of his unit had set out, the great leader settled some unfinished matters, and headed for home, leading the remaining small unit. Having ferreted out that only a small guerrilla unit was on the move towards the Laoye Range, the enemy force came waves upon waves in a bid to avenge its crushing defeats in many battles.

In consequence the great leader's unit had to force its way ahead fighting rearguard actions several times a day.

The unit reached the vicinity of the Tianqiao Range. It had to go a still longer distance than it had done so far.

On this arduous march, the respected leader fell ill. Having directed continued fighting and difficult march without a moment's rest, he came down with a chill. Everything became dark before the eyes of Company Commander Han Hung Gwon and other members. A warm place was needed to rest him. But there was no shelter in the snow-

bound forest, and it was impossible to build a campfire because of the enemy's persistent pursuit.

His condition grew steadily worse, and he became unconscious from time to time because of high fever. It seemed the sky had fallen, and the guerrillas felt quite helpless.

"Comrade Commander, what shall we do now with you?"—this is what gnawed at their hearts, not because they were afraid of their own sufferings and sacrifice but because they were deeply concerned about the great danger menacing the respected leader whom the whole nation looked on as the great sun of the revolution and lodestar of liberation.

Though in delirium, he opened his eyes quietly, as if replying to the anguished cries of his men. All the eyes turned to him. Looking round at the glum faces, he said in a low yet firm voice:

"Comrades, be steadfast....

"We are revolutionaries. We are now fighting a decisive battle with the enemy. In whatever circumstances, we should always think of the fatherland, and of the revolution first....

"We can never be dead. How should we close our eyes when the fatherland is soaked in blood? We should neither die nor have any right to die!"

Having encouraged his men with warm affection he was lost in thought. After a while he said:

"Comrades, write down a song, a revolutionary song!" And he recited a poem, stanza by stanza. In order to imbue his men with strength and courage, he composed a revolutionary song, lying on a horse-drawn sleigh, enduring the fever that chapped his lips:

Louder rang the Japanese jackboot,
Trampling our beautiful land underfoot.
Murder and arson, exploitation and plunder,
Tens of millions are groaning under.

Parents, brothers, sisters, wives, children—all,
Bleeding under the enemy bayonets fall.
My home, your field, whatever at hand,
Is all turned to ashes and barren land.

Every stanza he composed with superhuman endurance and energy, though unconscious, was a song of heart, a song of decisive battle.

With bitter feelings the men graved the words of the revolutionary song on their blood-boiling hearts, swallowing tears.

Anti-Japanese battle-cry vigorous sounds,
Awakened masses shout all round.
Tens of million throats cry out,
Cowardly Japanese get out.

Thanks to this encouraging song of struggle, the men strengthened their faith in certain victory, and continued with their arduous march with redoubled courage.

Towards the end of January 1935, the small unit got to a lumbermill near Tianqiaoling, where it was caught in an enemy encirclement. The enemy came from behind and both flanks, and a battalion-size force stood on guard in front.

The only way out was death-defying action to make a breakthrough. But it was risky for the company commander, as he was escorting the sick respected leader.

The enemy were steadily closing the circle, and time flew. Every minute was a tense impatient moment.

Unable to bear any more, Comrade Wal Nam, who had been brought up in the embrace of the respected leader since the days of Jilin, burst into tears.

An old guard at the lumbermill came to the guerrillas and asked what had happened with them in Chinese.

On learning who the sick man was, the old man was surprised and queried if it was real, this time in Korean.

Though he was deep in the mountain, pretending to be Chinese in aversion to the Japanese world, he had entertained a warm respect for the great leader who was defeating the Japanese villains, infusing the dark hearts of the nation with the light of rebirth.

In a trembling voice he sighed. "I'm Korean. Though old, I know the august name of the General. Ah, he is now in a critical condition...."

Gripping the old man's hand, Company Commander Han asked him

for a means of escape. The old man replied: "Well, I know saving the General means returning our dead Korean people to life..."—and lapsed into deep thought.

After a good while, he proposed a daring plan, saying as if to himself that if one is ready to risk life, anything is possible.

His plan was: "The owner of the lumbermill will arrive in a short time by a horse-drawn sleigh. When he comes, tie him and tell him to be a guide. He has considerable influence here, so when you are guided by him, 'punitive troops' won't attack you. And tie me up also in front of him, lest I get into trouble later on."

The old man's plan, of course, involved a certain risk. But, as there was no alternative, the company commander reported it to the respected leader who said: **"Everything is entrusted to you, comrades,"** as his illness was serious.

Soon five horse-drawn sleighs arrived at the lumbermill. There was not even a moment to waste. As was suggested by the old man, the guerrillas bound the owner and bade him to serve as a guide. He did not resist but agreed meekly in order to save his skin.

Presently the five sleighs started out on the way they had come. The members of the small unit disguised themselves as coachmen and porters. The great leader lay in the middle sleigh and the front one was occupied by the company commander, one guerrilla and the owner. The other guerrillas concealed themselves in the remaining sleighs.

The sleighs sped through the enemy encirclements, raising a cloud of snow. They ran through the enemy guard posts also in safety. At the sight of the lumbermill owner the enemy let them pass.

Once in a while, enemy troops stood in the way to investigate. Then the company commander pressed his pistol against the owner's side, who shouted he was going into the city carrying a serious patient.

The sleighs rushed on at even greater speed. The enemy troops turned aside to let them through, their bodies covered with powdery snow.

So they broke through the enemy's siege, laid in double and triple rings, to a safe place.

From a mountain top, the small unit sent back the old man to the lumbermill.

He almost broke into tears when he saw the respected leader in

anguish, and told them that they could find two Korean farm cabins deep at the foot of the Laoye Range.

The members of the small unit bade farewell to the kind old man, and headed for the Laoye Range. After a difficult trek in snow-covered mountains, they arrived at the very foot of the range. Deep in the forest they finally came across a solitary cabin secluded from the cruel world.

Here the guerrillas' ardent desire came true, the desire to find a warm room for the respected leader at least for one night since he had fallen ill.

An old man named Cho Taek Ju lived there with his family and they devoted themselves to his recovery. Their dedication was the same as that of the old worker at the Tianqiaoling lumbermill.

The old man was quite surprised to hear that the serious patient was none other than the great leader who carried the aspirations of the twenty million Korean people.

"What?" he sighed, "The General, the brilliant commander who would save our Korean nation, is he seriously ill?"

Having found the case critical, the old man ordered his daughter-in-law to build fire in the stove in the kitchen.

He had a lot of experience of illness.

Saying that as the General had suffered from the cold weather, his illness was sure to be due to chill, and that he should be made to profusely perspire, he got the *ondol* heater going and put some honey into some hot water and offered it to the General. He massaged the General's arms and legs all through night. When the General began perspiring past midnight, he was saying with delight:

"Good, the illness has declined," and ordered his daughter-in-law to prepare some millet gruel with honey in it.

Thanks to the dedicated efforts of the Old Cho's family, the great leader survived his illness, and sat in bed the next morning.

He thanked Old Cho, who advised him to remain in bed, and said:

"I feel as if I have become much lighter and fly up. I've been saved because I met your kind family."

He appreciated the sincerity of Old Cho's family time and again.

During his stay of some days there, the old man's family tried their best to improve his poor health. But they could not and felt sorry, because

they were poor and in the deep remote mountain.

Having understood their feelings, whenever he was served with food, the great leader praised the family, saying that the soy sauce tasted good and the coarse bean curd was especially nice, and showed a deep concern for their life.

When he learned that Old Cho's family had been forced to leave their native land by Japanese exploitation and led an isolated life in fear of the watching eyes of the forest police, tilling the hillside plots here in this foreign land, because they had no land to rent, the great leader felt a mental anguish for a long while, his face clouded.

Before he left, he told the old man's family that it would be better to move to the Luozigou area, since the enemy would no doubt step up "punitive actions" in spring. After a moment's thought, he said:

"We, the young sons of Korea, are to blame that you have to live an isolated life here, hidden away from the outside world in a foreign country where you came in search of a living. But trust us and be patient. The day will surely come when we Koreans, men and women, young and old, will be able to live in peace and free from worry in our liberated land."

These were words of great sympathy for the long suffering nation.

We thought of our people's unbounded fidelity to the great leader, the sun of the nation, and were moved with emotion by his devoted efforts to bring a bright day to our people who were most downtrodden and humiliated in the world.

Their steps became still lighter as the guerrillas started back to the guerrilla zone with the great leader who had recovered his health, though still pale and weak.

They now sang the revolutionary song lustily and gleefully which they had chanted stanza by stanza in a gloomy mood in the thick forest in Tianqiaoling....

Arise, ye toiling masses and unite,
With unshaken adamantine faith fight.
Hurrah! Let's crush forever Japanese terror,
Sing and dance under the Red Banner.

This song later became very popular among the KPRA men and the

people under the name "Song of Anti-Japanese War".

The expedition to north Manchuria was, indeed, a severe ordeal. No unimaginable bitter trials, however, could block the way of the Korean revolution. The road which the great leader showed for fulfilling the aspirations of the nation, the road sustained with intense loyalty by the twenty million fellow countrymen following him, was always crowned with glorious victory.

(2) IN ORDER TO DELIVER THE KOREAN REVOLUTION FROM CRISIS

The great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung went to the Xiongzhiying secret camp in Sandaowan, Yanji County after the historic Dahuangwai Meeting which was held from February 24 to March 3, 1935.

Here, I (Rim Chun Chu) had the great honour to meet the longed-for great leader. The unit assigned to me, an army doctor, the glorious and onerous task of looking after his health. At that time he was in very poor health having just recovered from a serious illness on the arduous march from north Manchuria.

However, before his impaired health had improved, he called the Dahuangwai Meeting to cope with the grave state of the Korean revolution.

Forgetting food and sleep, he argued single-handed day after day with the ignorant national chauvinists and the crafty sectarian-flunkeys exposing and denouncing their criminal act of conducting the anti-"Minsaeng-dan" struggle in an ultra-"Leftist" way.

I felt anew my heavy responsibility of taking care of the respected leader, great saviour of the revolution, who envigorated the dispirited Korean communists and people, and reforged the broken links of the Korean revolution.

It was in February of 1932 that the question of "Minsaeng-dan" was raised.

At that time, the enemy concocted the "Minsaeng-dan", a counter-

revolutionary spy organization, by gathering his stooges together.

The "Minsaeng-dan", manipulated by the Japanese imperialists, put forward the deceptive slogans "Guarantee of the national rights to the Korean people!" and "Autonomy of Koreans in Jiandao!", making it appear as if it spoke for the interests of the Korean people. But in fact it tried to paralyse our people's anti-Japanese consciousness, harm the Korean communists and bring about a rift between the Korean and Chinese peoples and set them against each other.

The enemy, however, could not achieve his heinous purpose. No matter how he embellished the "Minsaeng-dan", the people saw through its real nature and repudiated it.

As a result of the denunciation of the awakened people, the "Minsaeng-dan" was dissolved less than five months after its formation, and in September 6, 1934, the so-called "Jiandao Cooperation Association" appeared, which too was deterred from functioning by the vigilant revolutionary masses.

Admitting this in the "Experience in the Subversion of the Communist Party in Jiandao", the enemy confessed that at first a group of ten or so members of the "Minsaeng-dan" was infiltrated into the guerrilla zones, but were all arrested and killed, rendering it impossible to send others.

This notwithstanding, the national chauvinists and sectarian-flunkeys exaggerated the situation, making it appear as if many "Minsaeng-dan" members had penetrated the revolutionary organizations. They associated casual incidents and untoward events with the "Minsaeng-dan" and committed the rash act of suspecting people of being "Minsaeng-dan" members without any proper grounds and removing them from the revolutionary ranks.

The national chauvinists pursued evil designs in their activities. Under the cloak of anti-"Minsaeng-dan" struggle, they attempted to impair the authority and prestige of the Korean communists which were enhanced among the Korean and Chinese peoples, thanks to the wise leadership of the great leader, as well as to hold leading positions within the revolutionary ranks.

The cunning sectarian-flunkeys, too, regarded the anti-"Minsaeng-dan" struggle as a golden chance to eliminate the steadfast revolutionaries

who stood against their factional ends.

This caused bewildering confusion in the anti-"Minsaeng-dan" struggle. Groundless charges were framed and staunch revolutionaries were persecuted and murdered. Any slight defect in work was ascribed to the acts of the "Minsaeng-dan" and any trivial shortcoming in life suspected to be its inventions.

On one occasion, Kang Sang Ho, a company member, spilt some boiled rice during breakfast. A sectarian-flunkey saw this and bitterly denounced that to squander rice obtained at the cost of the revolutionary comrades' blood was a "Minsaeng-dan" act, and ordered him to go and get concrete information of the harvest of landlords in Changgou. It was a sort of punishment. Changgou was between a guerrilla zone and an enemy-controlled area, and armed members of the Self-defence Corps were harvesting it on the landlords' bidding. Sending him to this dangerous place was to get him killed or flee.

On the order of his "superior", Kang went to Changgou at the risk of his life. From a knoll he looked down at the entrance where armed members of the Self-defence Corps were loading the harvest on the carts under the watching eyes of the landlords.

He did not want even a grain carted away and came down running. The corps members were more than ten, yet he boldly threw out a hand grenade and shouted:

"Charge forward! The first company to the front and the third to the left!"

Thinking that they were surrounded, the corps members beat a retreat helter-skelter, without looking behind.

Having driven off the Self-defence Corps members with a single hand grenade, Kang returned with more than ten cartfuls of grain.

However, the villainous sectarian-flunkey blamed him: "You failed to capture ten rifles from the Self-defence Corps, because you acted alone."

On one trumped charge or other, fine communists were accused of being members of the "Minsaeng-dan" and removed from the revolutionary ranks.

Before he started on the march to north Manchuria, the respected leader had found out that the chauvinists and sectarian-flunkeys were

leading the anti-"Minsaeng-dan" struggle in a wrong way. He had then warned them repeatedly and repudiated the unjust charges against people.

It happened toward the first day of 1934 by lunar calendar.

All the members of the First Company in Wangqing were charged with "Minsaeng-dan" membership. The chauvinists and factionalists even attempted to dissolve the company without any conclusive evidence.

The chief of staff who had been visiting the company refused its members' invitation to celebrate the New Year Holiday with them, and returned saying: "I cannot enjoy the holiday together with you, because you are all 'Minsaeng-dan' members." So the company members were all in low spirits.

Having learned of this, the respected leader burst with anger, and rebuked him sternly and released him from the post of chief of staff. He went down to the First Company and cheered up the crestfallen men.

Having understood their painful feelings, he said:

"Those who fight the Japanese well and win all battles cannot be charged with 'Minsaeng-dan' membership. You ought to prove it in practice."

While staying with them for more than 20 days after the New Year Holiday, the respected leader turned the First Company into a strong, militant and model company.

Leading the First Company he fought a battle in Dabeigou and captured enemy weapons to replenish its equipment, and formed the Seventh Company around the core of the platoon to which Comrade O Jung Hup belonged to.

The shining combat result of the First Company and the organization of the Seventh Company meant a direct blow at the disruptors who attempted to undermine our revolutionary forces.

In another case, a chauvinist sent a message to the respected leader saying that the leader's life would be in danger, if one of his bodyguard surnamed Han is not removed because he was a "Minsaeng-dan" member.

He did not believe this, because the bodyguard had been faithful to the revolution and valiant in battles against the enemy.

Yet, the accusation could not be overlooked either.

So he thought it over, and called Han to his side. With great excitement he came to the leader who gave him a gun, telling him to go into Sanchakou and capture an enemy agent. But Han proposed to go without a gun, saying that if he failed in the mission, he would lose the gun also. He was more concerned about the weapon falling into the enemy's hands than his personal safety in case of failure.

It could never be that such a man was a "Minsaeng-dan" member. But the respected leader insisted and gave him the gun.

To provide against any possible accident, Han buried the gun and went into the occupied area where he successfully carried out his mission and came back. If the man had really been an enemy agent, he would have run away or acted against the operations of the unit. But he not only carried out his revolutionary task with credit and returned to his unit, but also went into a battle, and fought courageously in the van to the last moment even though he was wounded in the arm and was bleeding profusely.

The respected leader gave a stern warning to the chauvinists who had levelled such a groundless charge.

Thanks to the principled stand and relentless struggle of the respected leader who treasured and loved the revolutionary soldiers and tested the people in practice, many people were saved from the unjust charge of being "Minsaeng-dan" member.

Company Commander Chang Yong San (Po Ri), a well-known military commander, was cleared of a false charge and was able to take up arms again thanks to the tender-hearted beloved leader; a boy of Bayahu village who was suspected of having thrown poison in the well was proved innocent and took a road of rebirth in his warm bosom.

The criminal acts of the chauvinists and sectarian-flunkeys were shattered one by one. However, while the respected leader was on the march into north Manchuria away from the guerrilla zone in late October 1934, the sectarians got on a rampage again, arbitrarily removed many people from the revolutionary ranks, branding them as "Minsaeng-dan" members.

Putting the Korean people's desire for national liberation on a par with the Japanese imperialists' clamour about "Autonomy of Koreans in

Jiandao", they cruelly murdered those who talked about Korea's independence, labelling them as "Minsaeng-dan" members. They went so far as to claim that "the Koreans couldn't be trusted", putting up absurd sophistry that "the father of 'Minsaeng-dan' is factionalist, the father of the factionalist is nationalist and the father of the nationalist is Japanese imperialism".

The situation was very grave. In the name of anti-"Minsaeng-dan" struggle people were terrorised for minor errors—an official of the secretariat who was true to the revolution was denounced for dropping some words while cutting a stencil; a guerrilla was condemned and killed accidentally firing a weapon while cleaning; a young cook was taken to task for scorching some rice; and grave charges were hurled against those who lagged behind the marching column because of sore feet in full view of the ranks.

The crafty Japanese imperialists capitalized on the serious conditions of the revolutionary ranks. They brewed plots to encourage the chauvinists and sectarian-flunkeys. By means of dropping faked letters or spreading rumours, they created the impression that many "Minsaeng-dan" members were inside the revolutionary ranks.

Duped by this, the ignorant chauvinists and sectarian-flunkeys became more rampant. Using their leading posts, they inflicted tortures on the "Minsaeng-dan" suspects to extort false confessions.

Tortured beyond endurance, the suspects falsely charged others with "Minsaeng-dan", which produced many "Minsaeng-dan" members.

A terror-laden atmosphere reigned in the guerrilla zones, and dire confusion was caused in the revolutionary ranks. People denounced each other and failed to discern who was who.

It was evident to everybody that if this tense situation continued, the Korean revolution would be plunged into a destructive crisis.

No one, however, dared to come forward to save the grave situation. If anyone did, he had to risk his life because the national chauvinists and sectarian-flunkeys were in leading positions, and covered their acts with super-revolutionary phrases.

Who could be equal to the task of overcoming this crisis? No one dared to come out though he well knew that if the stupid chauvinists were

allowed to go on with their gruesome criminal act, it would disrupt the Korean revolution.

With bitter tears in their eyes, the people waited impatiently for the respected leader to return as early as possible from the campaign in north Manchuria.

Back from his campaign, he, though still weak physically, thought time and again over this serious situation, forgetting food and sleep, and groped for the ways to rectify the ultra-"Leftist" errors of the anti-"Minsaeng-dan" struggle.

Due to this deep worry, his health became worse gradually and his old sickness began to raise its head. He had a fever, but did not lay in bed even a moment.

On the way back from the well one day bodyguards unexpectedly found the respected leader writing something on the stump of a tree.

Taken aback, they rushed to him and said:

"Comrade Commander, what are you doing outside in the cold, suffering from a high fever?"

With anxiety, they wanted him to return to the log cabin.

The respected leader wore a tender smile on his face to set their mind at ease, and told them to return to the cabin first, saying he was enjoying fresh air, as he felt quite well.

The young bodyguards withdrew unwillingly. Looking back at him they saw him writing something in his memobook. From time to time he put his hand to his forehead as if he had a headache and jotted down something, and again touched his forehead.

"What is he writing?" the bodyguards thought to themselves. Suddenly they conjured up memories of the respected leader composing "Song of Anti-Japanese War" suffering from a high fever in the horse-drawn sledge.

"No doubt, he is writing a song," they judged and rushed back to him.

"Comrade Commander, what do you keep writing? Are you composing another song?"

It was a naive question which did not understand his painful heart. A genial smile on his face, he replied:

"Yes, I'm writing a song. It will be better than the 'Song of Anti-Japanese War'."

The bodyguards shouted for joy. However, no one knew that he was drafting in the notebook a document for the historic Dahuangwai Meeting to save the Korean revolution from crisis.

Combatting the illness, he mapped out a great policy to smash the machinations of the chauvinists and sectarian-flunkeys who brought the revolutionary ranks to destruction, and to save the Korean revolution.

The historic Dahuangwai Meeting was convened amid the great interest of the people in the guerrilla zones. A sign of fretfulness and uneasiness was seen on the rough faces of the chauvinists and sectarian-flunkeys who got together in the Dahuangwai guerrilla zone. Yet, superior in number, they tried to conceal their unrest and put a bold face.

The meeting lasted for days from February 24, 1935 to March 3.

At the meeting, he had to take the floor scores of times against the chauvinists and sectarian-flunkeys.

The atmosphere of the meeting was tense and heated arguments were exchanged.

The national chauvinists and the sectarian-flunkeys attempted to sway the meeting in their favour. Justifying the ultra-"Leftist" way of struggle against the "Minsaeng-dan" without any scientific ground, they hurled absurd slanders on the Korean communists.

But the meeting did not go as they wished.

The respected leader himself undertook to solve the crisis of the revolution. He thoroughly smashed their fabrications and sophistry with the scientific materials and grounds he had prepared while combatting illness.

He fully exposed and criticized, above all, the wrong views of the chauvinists who had trampled underfoot the Juche line for the Korean revolution and obstructed the Korean people's national-liberation struggle, setting the national tasks of the revolution against its international tasks.

Clarifying the independent stand of the Korean communists, he stressed that to fight for the Korean revolution was an inviolable sacred right of the Korean communists and people and their lofty national and international duty.

He completely frustrated the chauvinists' absurd attempts to oppose

the national duty of the Korean communists to their international duty, and to identify the Korean people's aspirations for national liberation with the Japanese imperialists' clamour about "Autonomy of Koreans in Jiandao".

Having made clear the cause of the "Minsaeng-dan" he completely exposed and denounced the criminal attempts of the wicked chauvinists to undermine the internal forces of our revolution.

At the meeting the chauvinists, thirsting for political power, went so far as to ascribe the formation of the "Minsaeng-dan" to the factional strifes of the Korean nationalists and communists. They alleged that the Koreans who had been once engaged in the Korean nationalist movement or taken part in the revolutionary movement prior to 1930 were all members or agents of the "Minsaeng-dan" and that 80 to 90 per cent of the Korean communists in the guerrilla zones bordering the Tuman River were either enlisted in or connected with that spy ring.

Indignantly refuting the wild charges of these ignorant and irresponsible fellows, the respected leader said:

"We cannot indiscriminately condemn people merely because they once took part in the nationalist movement. Among them there are many fine people including Hong Bom Do who fought honestly for national independence. Furthermore, even if in the past the nationalists did not understand Marxism, it is good for them now to grasp it correctly, reeducate themselves and devote themselves to the communist movement. We should not condemn them because they were once nationalists.

"Not all those who formerly participated in the nationalist movement are necessarily 'Minsaeng-dan' members nor should they all be condemned as agents of Japanese imperialism.

"The same may be said of factionalists. We hate the factionalists who did immeasurable harm to the Korean communist movement, and naturally we should fight them. But in the Korean communist movement of the 1920's too, most of the factionalists were found only in the leadership. Therefore we cannot assert that all Korean communists who were active in the 1920's, are factionalists, merely because they once belonged to some faction or another.

"Accordingly, if all those who had once belonged to some faction or other are branded as 'Minsaeng-dan' members, our revolutionary ranks would suffer a tremendous loss."

The respected leader who clarified the essence of the problems on the basis of historical facts and on an out-and-out revolutionary principle irrefutably proved that the formation of the "Minsaeng-dan" should not be ascribed to any "factional strife" and that it was a stratagem of the Japanese imperialists and their agents who were intent on undermining the revolutionary forces from within by alienating the Koreans from the Chinese and making the Koreans fight among themselves.

His logical and clear-cut refutation did not leave any room for the chauvinists and sectarian-flunkeys to utter even a single word in defence of themselves.

Giving them no breathing space, he dealt a powerful blow at their intolerable view that more than 80 to 90 per cent of the Korean revolutionaries in east Manchuria were either members of the "Minsaeng-dan" or its close associates. He said:

"Scientifically, if an alien element in any organization exceeds 80 per cent, whatever it may be, in the conflict between the old and the new, it can no longer be said to exist in its original state. This is obvious to anybody.

"...If 80 to 90 per cent of the Korean communists active in east Manchuria are 'Minsaeng-dan' members, how could they have endured the rigours of winter for three or four years without adequate clothes and sufficient food and without shelter at the guerrilla bases? Even a mere child could answer this question.

"If such a large percentage were traitors, how is it possible for us even to hold this meeting? Even if only eight to nine per cent, not 80 to 90 per cent, of the armymen defending the areas around Dahuangwai were 'Minsaeng-dan' members, it would not be possible for us to hold this meeting or rest here without worry.

"We remember many of the comrades, falsely accused of being 'Minsaeng-dan' members, who displayed a noble spirit, not capitulating before the enemy even when they were killed. You must have seen many times those branded as collaborators dying with shouts: 'Long live the independence of Korea!', 'Long live the victory of the revolution of the Korean and Chinese peoples!' Can you really call these men 'Minsaeng-dan' members?"

A hush fell over the meeting place. To this sharp question the

chauvinists who had shouted themselves hoarse shaking their fists at the meeting did not dare to reply, and hung their heads. Each of his logical arguments touched them on the raw.

The respected leader squarely blamed the chauvinists for their sophistry and machinations against the cadres.

From the first days of the anti-"Minsaeng-dan" struggle, the chauvinists with political ambitions had left no stone unturned to remove the Korean cadres from the revolutionary organizations and the armed ranks, and occupy the leading positions. Insisting that "A minority nation could not guide a majority nation", they had rejected the fine Korean cadres who were steeled in the revolutionary struggle, and committed the criminal acts of executing and assassinating them on false charges of being "Minsaeng-dan" members. Many Korean cadres had been eliminated from the revolutionary ranks.

The respected leader mercilessly exposed and censured the foul deeds of the chauvinists, and said:

"The cadres should be steadfast in their class consciousness, armed with Marxism-Leninism and infinitely loyal to the revolution; they must have an indomitable revolutionary will to fight and suffer, and be capable of organizing and mobilizing the masses of the people and educating them.

"The argument that Korean cadres cannot guide the Chinese people and, therefore, should be replaced by Chinese cadres is not Marxist, but a nationalist view devoid of class content.

"We, proletarian internationalists, cannot be narrow nationalists on the question of cadres.

"Armed struggle itself has eloquently proved that in altering the composition of cadres, it is impermissible to mechanically expel the competent Korean cadres who had been tempered in many years of revolutionary struggle and are strong in class consciousness, and to engage men in an unprincipled way without taking their preparedness into account, simply because they are Chinese."

The attempts of the chauvinists and sectarian-flunkeys to dominate the meeting by relying on their majority were shattered to smithereens. Neither sophistry, nor majority, nor conspiracy could succeed before the respected leader.

They showed their total bankruptcy in face of his principled stand manifested in the uncompromising resolute struggle for the fundamental interests of the Korean revolution.

The Dahuangwai Meeting which proceeded amidst the keen attention of the people in the guerrilla zones was brought to an end after ten days.

Having been dealt a staggering blow at the meeting, the chauvinists and the sectarian-flunkeys left Dahuangwai in low spirits. The people there who had watched their crafty moves felt relieved at the sight of their being as downcast as frostbitten greens, and said: "We are saved!", "General Kim Il Sung put everything to rights!"

The report of the successful Dahuangwai Meeting instantly spread all over the guerrilla zones along the Tuman River, throwing the people into a joyous ferment. This was a historic meeting which decisively smashed the downright machinations to disorganize the internal forces of our revolution .and saved the Korean revolution from crisis.

At this meeting the great leader relinked the lifeline of the Korean revolution which had almost broken, and envigorated the despairing Korean communists and people.

Upon hearing about the outcome of the meeting, all the people hugged each other for joy and shed tears of warm gratitude for the great leader who had saved our revolution through a single-handed, hard struggle against the cruel chauvinists and the wicked sectarian-flunkeys.

All the Tuman River guerrilla zones were gripped by an infinite sense of joy and happiness in having their great revolutionary leader in the person of sagacious Comrade Kim Il Sung.

His health further deteriorated, due to the intense activity for ten days in order to foil the attempts to endanger the cause of national liberation, taking the destiny of the Korean revolution upon his shoulders.

Not only from the point of duty of an army doctor, but also in response to the unanimous anxiety of the entire Korean people for the respected leader's health, I did my best to hasten his recovery while he was in Xiongzhiying secret camp.

But it was a subjective desire, and could not be conducive to the recovery of his health, because I lacked medicines and medical skill.

Some days afterwards he, still pale and weak, set out to organize the work of completely eliminating the aftereffects of the anti-"Minsaeng-dan" struggle which had done untold harm.

We looked forward to a bright future of the Korean revolution, as we saw him off with profound reverence.

III. SPREADING THE FLAMES OF ARMED STRUGGLE OVER VAST AREAS

1. RELINQUISHING OF GUERRILLA ZONES

After the Dahuangwai Meeting the great leader called the Yaoyinggou Meeting on March 27, 1935.

At the meeting he made a historic speech *On Relinquishing the Guerrilla Zones and Advancing over Wide Areas.*

His speech and the problems discussed and agreed upon at the meeting were quickly brought home to the KPRA men and the people in the guerrilla zones through the Party, YCLK and other revolutionary organizations.

The unit of the KPRA to which I (O Jin U) belonged received the report of the meeting earlier than the other units, because it was stationed in Yaoyinggou, its venue.

At the meeting, the great leader put forward the strategic policy of relinquishing the guerrilla zones, guerrilla bases in the form of liberated areas, along the Tuman River and switching over to vigorous offensives by advancing the KPRA units over wide areas.

The respected leader said:

"Now we have the urgent task of following up these valuable successes and experience so as to further the revolutionary struggle. This task requires that we leave the limited guerrilla zones and launch into wider areas for large-scale guerrilla operations. Carrying our struggle into a more active stage is the only way to deliver heavy political and military blows at the enemy with the support of broad sections of the Korean and Chinese peoples and press forward dynamically with the work of founding the party and with the united front activities."

This strategic policy was a wise one reflecting a new requirement of the development of our revolution most correctly.

In the initial period of the formation of the AJPGA, our forces were weak and the Japanese imperialists were most cruelly butchering the revolutionary masses. Under these conditions it was a strategic task to establish guerrilla bases—liberated areas along the Tuman River.

These zones enabled us to preserve and train the revolutionary forces and to expand and wage a bloody armed struggle for four to five years. During this period our armed struggle had developed in scope rapidly and the internal forces of our revolution centring around the KPRA grown in tremendous strength.

Despite the persistent "punitive operations" of the enemy, the KPRA had grown from several companies at its inception to many divisions. It had made unimaginable strides forward not only in numerical strength but also politically and ideologically and in military technique.

The KPRA men, former workers and peasants who had been denied schooling and had not known what the revolution meant, became steadfast revolutionaries who had unshaken faith in the respected leader's great revolutionary idea and revolutionary theory, and the unity and cohesion of the revolutionary ranks had further strengthened in the course of struggle against factionalism and Right and "Left" opportunism.

Every armyman was determined to remain ever true to the revolution led by the great leader, and fight the enemy even at the cost of his life.

Our armaments had improved, too. Whereas even rifles had been in short supply in the past, all the units were now equipped with machine guns and other modern weaponry.

The leading personnel and soldiers of the KPRA had studied the classic *Guerrilla Action* written by the great leader while actively leading crucial battles and fully mastered his superb guerrilla tactics, and accumulated a wealth of experience in a large number of battles including the defence of guerrilla zones and attack on walled towns. Now they had become strong enough to defeat the enemy, taking the initiative in battles under all conditions.

The mass foundations of the armed struggle had also been consolidated.

The guerrilla zones had not only protected the huge revolutionary masses from the enemy's suppression and massacre but also given them revolutionary education and training so that they could become a powerful political force.

In defiance of continued ordeals, the people in these zones who had become masters of a new world and new life thanks to the beloved leader's concern, had become firmly convinced of the victory of the revolution, and fought stubbornly as one man, rendering valuable assistance to the KPRA.

The resounding victories of the KPRA and the worthy life of the people in the guerrilla zones had exerted a great revolutionary influence on broad sections of the people in Korea and different parts of Manchuria, and enhanced their anti-Japanese spirit rapidly.

Though under the despotic tyranny of Japanese imperialism, the people had placed all their hopes and expectations on the anti-Japanese armed struggle guided by the great leader, anti-Japanese brilliant commander and legendary hero. They had rendered positive material and spiritual assistance to the KPRA and vigorously waged different forms of struggles against Japanese imperialism everywhere.

Under his wise guidance the zones had played an excellent part as a strategic base for the anti-Japanese armed struggle.

All this did not allow us to confine ourselves in the limited guerrilla zones but demanded that we launch into wider areas and develop the anti-Japanese armed struggle in scope and strength. It would make it possible to rally broader masses more closely and bring about fresh upsurge in the Korean revolution.

Having made a deep study of these requirements of the development of our revolution, the great leader presented a new strategic policy. To dismantle the guerrilla zones on our own initiative and launch into vast areas was the most correct policy also in view of the needs of the obtaining situation.

Though their "siege-and-attack" operations were totally frustrated, the enemy perpetrated vicious "punitive actions" on a largest-ever scale by throwing in a larger number of troops. The number of "punitive" forces in those days was more than four times that in 1933.

Beside the military offensives, the enemy made more frenzied efforts

to blockade the guerrilla zones economically and sever the people there from those in the enemy-controlled areas.

Under these circumstances the preoccupation with the defence of the fixed guerrilla zones would prevent the KPRA from preserving the revolutionary forces trained and tempered over many years, and leave it passive in the fight against the enemy.

Only by advancing into wider areas for positive offensives to wipe out the enemy everywhere would it be possible to disperse the enemy forces, put them on the defensive, retain the already trained revolutionary forces and grow new revolutionary forces over broad areas.

At the meeting, however, the "Leftist" opportunists opposed this new strategic policy. They failed to make a scientific analysis and study of the situation and insisted on "defending the guerrilla bases at any cost".

The great leader smashed their arguments to smithereens, saying that though their line might appear to be revolutionary, it was in fact a madcap act tantamount to sitting and waiting to be destroyed and a mistaken view contrary to the requirements of the development of the revolution.

This new strategic policy was a wise one which would enable us to overcome the difficult situation positively, further expand and strengthen the anti-Japanese armed struggle and expedite the victorious advance of the Korean revolution as a whole.

The respected leader underscored the need to carry out his policy successfully without the slightest vacillation and indicated the future tasks of the KPRA and the specific matters in relation to the dismantling of guerrilla zones.

The Yaoyinggou Meeting also discussed the question as regards the anti-"Minsaeng-dan" struggle. It confirmed the absolute correctness of the policy on rectifying the ultra-"Leftist" error of this struggle which the great leader had put forward at the Dahuangwai Meeting.

Even after their criminal acts were fully exposed and shattered theoretically at the Dahuangwai Meeting, the "Leftist" opportunists and the sectarian-flunkeys had made attempts covertly and overtly to achieve their underhand ends. But at the Yaoyinggou Meeting they were dealt a decisive blow and could not raise their heads.

This was a historic meeting of tremendous significance in holding fast to the Juche-motivated line of the Korean revolution, advancing the anti-

Japanese armed struggle onto a higher stage and bringing our revolution to a new upswing.

The great leader's new strategic policy greatly impressed the members of the KPRA and heightened their faith in victory.

At first some comrades were disconcerted at the dissolution of the guerrilla zones which had been defended over four to five years at the risk of their lives. But in the course of study and debate our armymen became fully convinced that this did not mean drawing back from the enemy, as the "Leftist" opportunists had put it, but designed to administer a stronger blow at the enemy, and protect the revolutionary masses and consolidate the mass basis of the armed struggle more firmly in conformity with the requirements of the development of the situation. We set out as one to carry out the new strategic tasks.

Right after the meeting concrete measures were taken to relinquish the guerrilla zones. The great leader earnestly taught that this was a revolutionary undertaking for the accomplishment of new strategic task. In order to carry it out with success, he sent fine Party workers and military and political cadres to the guerrilla zones, who organized this work meticulously in cooperation with the leading officers of the units of the KPRA stationed there, the workers of the people's revolutionary government and chiefs of the revolutionary organizations.

To begin with, meetings were held at the units of the KPRA and the revolutionary organizations to seriously discuss the measures for carrying out the strategic policy formulated at the Yaoyinggou Meeting and explanatory and propaganda work was conducted among the armymen and the people.

It was not easy to explain the need to quit the guerrilla zones to the people. Some people held that they would follow the KPRA men cost what it may, and others insisted that they would remain behind even after the zones were dismantled. Though they were well aware of the absolute correctness of the respected leader's new strategic policy, they felt a great regret at leaving the zones.

The people had lived there with hope for the future, enduring the biting cold and hunger, facing boldly all dangers, as they had found infinite happiness and worthy life in the guerrilla zones—a new world — under the guidance of the sagacious leader. They had to part with the

KPRA which was linked with them by closer ties of kinship than the flesh and blood, without the benefit of a new worthy life any longer in the bright new society established by him.

It was the wrench to part with no definite promise for the sake of the arduous revolution. The mere thought of it seemed rending their hearts. However the people had to put up with it for the great cause of the revolution and eternal happiness to come.

The memory of what happened in these villages still moves me to tears.

Comrades Choe and Ryo, women functionaries of the Party and YCLK organizations, were sent on mission to explain the new strategic policy to Barengou village which was situated at the edge of a guerrilla zone.

Here, as in other villages, they called together people in a house to tell them about the new policy. They had long discussions with the villagers, telling them in detail where they should go, whom they should meet, and how they should settle down and build a life. On ordinary occasions the people would ask questions and nod in agreement. But this time they remained silent, their heads down. In a bid to change the atmosphere, the women workers proposed a recreation party at the end of the explanation, and began to sing a revolutionary song to make the night a significant one. However, the people present in the room did not join them.

"Comrades, let us sing the song!" the women workers appealed and started singing again. Yet the villagers preserved a sulky silence as before.

A recreation party used to be held after a meeting in the villages in guerrilla zones, and it was a merry affair. However, the people did not feel like singing a song at their last gathering here in the village.

In the end they burst out sobbing, instead of singing a song.

It was not because they did not support the lofty intention of the respected leader or were afraid to go to the enemy-controlled area. Gripping the hands of the two comrades, they said in a choked voice: "How can we part from our beloved General Kim Il Sung?" "How can we eat when you are all gone?"

The two women workers soothed the people. Their voices trembled when they predicted that a good life would be enjoyed in the liberated country under the leadership of the wise General. As they forced a smile,

tears streamed down their faces.

Drying his tears, an old man assured:

"Young women, don't worry! We will make arrangements to leave as told by the General.... We will live stoutly in any places, upholding his will."

The women workers spent the night with the villagers who were reluctant to part.

Every family took out their maize and ground it to make maize cakes. It was a meagre amount of grain they had saved for urgent need, while living on vegetable gruel.

When the women workers were about to leave the next day, they were given all the cakes the villagers had made overnight enduring the wrench of parting. Saying that they had nothing but the maize cakes to give for their long trip, people came out to the end of the village and saw them off.

There were such tearful scenes in the ideological work for making the people quit their guerrilla zones.

Now reading the minds of the people, the great leader held a joint meeting of army and people in Yaoyinggou, and made a significant speech.

Having expounded the great significance of the policy presented at the Yaoyinggou Meeting and the obtaining situation, he taught the people in detail how to evacuate the guerrilla zones, and how to live and fight in their new settlements.

At the end of the speech he ardently appealed to them to have a firm faith in the victory of the revolution wherever they might go, and devote themselves to the struggle to expedite the victory.

The speech pointed out clear-cut fighting orientations and ways for the KPRA and the people in the guerrilla zone, and strengthened their firm resolve to devotedly fight for the victory.

Joint meetings also took place in all other guerrilla zones.

Meanwhile the units of the KPRA stepped up their operations against the enemy. The objectives were to ensure the smooth dissolution of the guerrilla zones by containing the enemy militarily, and fully demonstrate our might to instill courage and faith into the people who were leaving the zones and the residents in the enemy-held areas. Attacks on the enemy were also necessary to capture weapons, ammunition, provisions

and military supplies and make preparations for advance into wide areas.

Along with the ideological campaign to evacuate the people and preparations for positive operations over vast areas, complex work was carried out to expand the ranks of the KPRA and dispatch political workers to the enemy-ruled areas.

The great leader organized a short-term course for these political workers and saw that fine comrades from the units of the KPRA and the revolutionary organizations were enlisted in it.

On the other hand, he dispatched Pak Gil Song, Kim Ju Hyon and other fine comrades who were capable of doing the underground political work cleverly to the homeland and different parts of Manchuria.

On his instructions the children and young people who had been educated and tempered in the Red Guards, the AJSDC, the Shock Brigade, the Children's Vanguard and other paramilitary bodies and revolutionary organizations were actively enlisted in the KPRA.

Every young man in guerrilla zones wanted to join the army. Especially when the zones were relinquished, and the KPRA was about to advance into extensive areas, all the young people in the zones did not miss this chance to join the army. The members of the Children's Corps and the Women's Association who had lost their fathers and brothers, husbands and sisters, at the hands of the enemy vyingly volunteered for military service.

But it was impossible to accept all of them into the army.

So the respected leader saw to it that the volunteers were studied closely, and that they were accepted on the basis of full consideration of their family conditions and health and the future activities in the enemy areas.

As the KPRA was expanded all at once, the tailor corps were busy making uniforms.

Right after the Yaoyinggou Meeting, the great leader reinforced the tailor corps and sent it into a safe place to make uniforms for the armymen who would start out for wide areas.

Some two months after the Yaoyinggou Meeting, to May of the same year, the Tuman River guerrilla zones were agog with preparatory work for carrying out the new strategic policy.

Busy as he was handling with the complex matters for the dissolution

of the guerrilla zones and advance into vast areas, the respected leader took a constant deep interest in the people's life and showed them great kindness.

Immediately after the meeting he ordered the KPRA units to obtain daily necessities and funds for the people, because he was greatly pained to let them leave the guerrilla zones without any proper clothing as a result of the enemy's repeated "punitive operations".

In response to his warm care for the people, the KPRA units in different parts mounted many attacks on the enemy's logistics bases and the concentration villages to get necessary goods and funds for the people. Thus, the people leaving the zones were all provided with money, provisions, clothes, footwear and other necessary articles.

As the people made preparations to move, the great leader saw that the guerrilla zones were relinquished one by one from May of the same year.

Still unsatisfied with these measures, he went among the masses to show them a warm solicitude lest a slightest shadow should be cast on their minds, and infused them with firm faith in the bright future.

The day came when we had to part with the people. The people assembled in the front yard of the log hut which housed the People's Revolutionary Government.

The members of the KPRA stationed in Yaoyinggou and senders-off got together.

We said goodbye to the people who were leaving the zones and hugged them. Sons bade farewell to mothers, and brothers to sisters. Fathers took their kids from their wives and hugged them. The innocent children smiled at their fathers, playing with the buttons of their uniforms, while the wives turned their faces to hide their feelings, with tiestrings applied to their mouths.

Some people were going deeper into the mountains to follow the plough and others were leaving in search of their relatives in the home villages. Still others planned to settle down in unfamiliar enemy-held areas. They were all determined to become the seeds of revolution wherever they might go, and awaken and rally the masses and persist in the struggle.

The people said goodbye to each other, clasping each other's hands, and said: "Let us live on stoutly and meet again, as we will surely win victory in the revolution guided by the great General. Let us smile and part with each other, with a hope for the day when we will come to lead a happy life in the liberated country as we had in the guerrilla zones.

"Long live General Kim Il Sung!"

"Long live the Korean People's Revolutionary Army!"

"Down with Japanese imperialism!"

"Long live the victory of the Korean revolution!"

Loud shouts of *manse* went up. Those leaving and sending off shouted "Hurrah!" and slogans.

The people began to start out in columns. Waving their farewell they sang:

Red Flag, the banner of the masses,
Drapes the soldier when he passes.
Dyed crimson by the blood of the bold,
Flowing till the body is stiff and cold.
Then raise the Crimson Banner high,
Under its shade we'll live and die.
Cowards may flinch, and traitors sneer,
We shall hold the Red Flag dear.

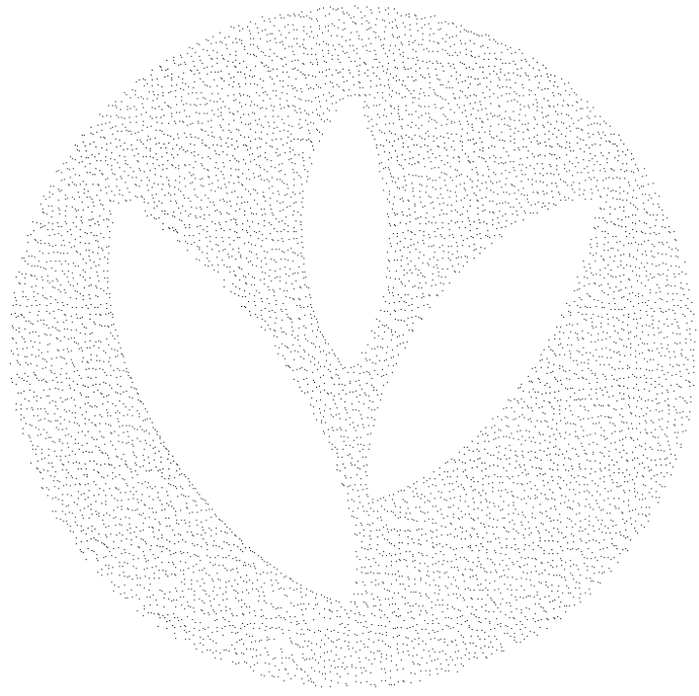
They left Yaoyinggou as they sang the revolutionary song, firmly pledging themselves to remain ever true to the revolution in accordance with the aims of the respected leader General Kim Il Sung.

Singing the song we stood long in the Yaoyinggou forest in which spring had turned green, as we sent off the people.

After the people left, the KPRA units started out from the guerrilla zone.

In accordance with the assignments given by the great leader, they started a great march from all the guerrilla zones along the Tuman River toward a new victory—the units operating in Wangqing and Hunchun areas advanced to Ningan and Emu in north Manchuria and the units in Yanji, Helong and Antu into the homeland and Jiaohe, Dunhua, Fusong and Mengjiang.

The Tuman River guerrilla zones admirably played their historic part, and the anti-Japanese armed struggle definitely embarked upon a new stage of development.



2. THE SECOND MARCH INTO NORTH MANCHURIA

(1) PRIOR TO THE MARCH

Early in June 1935 the Wangqing district unit of the KPRA to which I (O Jin U) belonged, left Yaoyinggou for Luozigou, under the command of the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung.

He assembled the units active in Wangqing and Hunchun areas in the vicinity of Luozigou in order to move into vast areas of north Manchuria in accordance with the policy put forward at the historic Yaoyinggou Meeting.

As regards the objectives of the march into north Manchuria, the respected leader said:

"The main force of the KPRA starts out again on a long march into north Manchuria with the purpose of helping the units operating there to heighten their militancy and conducting large-scale guerrilla operations in cooperation with these units to wipe out a large enemy force, while exerting revolutionary influence on the local people to organize and mobilize them for the anti-Japanese struggle."

As he taught, the second march was aimed at dealing a strong blow at the enemy in the vast areas of north Manchuria to throw him into a great panic, and helping the anti-Japanese armed units active there to expand and develop the armed struggle. The march was also designed to bring a revolutionary influence to bear upon the broad sections of local people and consolidate the mass foundations of the anti-Japanese armed struggle.

At the same time, the main force of the KPRA had to set the anti-Japanese armed struggle aflame more fiercely over wider areas and strengthen solidarity with the world revolutionary forces to create a more

favourable international situation for the advance of the Korean revolution.

We quickened our steps with excitement. Though we felt a regret at leaving the dear place which we had defended with blood for four to five years, our hearts swelled up with the expectation of new operations in vast areas under the guidance of the great leader. The verdant forest in early summer rustled like our hearts, as it saw us off. We marched some 80 kilometres into the vicinity of Luozigou that day. Soon the unit active in the Hunchun district joined us.

When all the units assembled, the great leader planned an attack on Luozigou and issued combat order. We surrounded it from three sides and got ready for action. Struck with alarm, the Meng unit of the puppet Manchukuo Army stationed there sent a delegate and sued for peace with us. The great leader complied with the request and exacted a promise that they would refrain from hostile acts against the KPRA and stop harassing the people.

Without firing a single shot, the KPRA marched into Luozigou in stately array, under the command of the great leader.

Beside themselves with delight and emotion, all the townsfolk came out and warmly welcomed, shouting *manse* for the longed-for respected leader.

He billeted his unit in Luozigou and the neighbouring villages—Laomuzhuhe, Xintunzi, Guandi, Sandaohezi, Hedong and Taipinggou. On his order we carried out brisk mass political work among the people, while making preparations for the march into north Manchuria.

The *Tano* Festival (the May fifth of the lunar calendar) was near at hand. Since the guerrilla zones had been abandoned and the march into north Manchuria started, he thought that the festival would be not only enjoyed but convince the people in this semi-guerrilla zone of the victory of the revolution and heighten the morale of the KPRA on the march.

An art performance was prepared at the units and an athletic meet of armymen and people planned.

Upholding the respected leader's plan to enjoy the red-letter day significantly with the people, the underground revolutionary organizations in Luozigou and the nearby villages made good arrangements

for the occasion. They prepared gifts and sufficient food for the army's long march.

The *Tano* Festival arrived. The village people who had wound up spring sowing became greatly animated from the early morning, as they were enjoying themselves in the presence of the respected leader.

Despite our dissuasion they sent us food and tobacco pouches, handkerchiefs, thread-balls and other gifts which they had made over many sleepless nights. We were moved with emotion. Though it was not expensive, each of the gifts was indicative of their great trust and expectations for our People's Revolutionary Army and of their warm kindred affection and transparent sincerity.

The athletic meet took place in the playground of the Luozigou School in the presence of the respected leader. It was a great success.

A men's wrestling contest at one corner was watched with breathless suspense and women enjoyed swinging at the other.

Armymen joined the wrestling, and women soldiers mingled themselves with women at the swinging place. As they took part in the games, they talked of the not-so-far-off day when the twenty million fellow countrymen would have athletic meet, in a far more grand style in the liberated land in the presence of the respected leader.

There was a football game between armymen and village youth. It was an interesting scene.

When one team kicked the ball into the opposite goal after dangerous scramble, a shout broke out rocking the ground. The village people who had lived in sighs and tears in the cursed society laughed and enjoyed themselves. The athletic meet lasted till dusk.

In the evening there was an art performance of the KPRA for the people of Luozigou and all other nearby villages. All people, young and old, saw it.

Open-air stages were set up in front of spacious grounds which were occupied by the audience, and bonfires were lit on both sides of the stages lighting the place as bright as the day.

The performance started with the chorus of "March of Guerrillas", and a variety of other items were put on the stage. Even after the

performance, the people did not return home. The armymen and people enjoyed the summer night happily as they danced and laughed.

As was expected by the great leader, the *Tano* Festival left a deep impression on the people in Luozigou and its neighbourhood. Remembering this day for a long time, the people rendered disinterested assistance to the KPRA and fought gallantly against Japanese imperialism.

The spirits of our armymen, too, rose high on the occasion. With unabated excitement they hurried with their preparations for the march. The recruits who had participated in the joint functions of the army and the people for the first time showed a greater zeal in military training, entertaining a greater pride in being members of the KPRA.

At that time sad news reached our ears. It was about the mass murder of people in Sidaohezi by the "Jingan Army" stationed in Wangbaowan near Laoheishan, about 40 kilometres off Luozigou. Large armed forces including the most notorious 300-strong "Jingan Army", the police and the armed Self-defence Corps were entrenched there.

The "Jingan Army" was a unit of the Manchukuo Army, consisting of the sons of reactionary landlords and pro-Japanese agents, which was directed by Japanese "instructors". It was called an "iron army" which was on a par with the Japanese aggressor army, an "invincible Imperial Army".

As it was fresh from Changchun, its base, it was ignorant of the might of the KPRA and behaved arbitrarily.

Upon arriving here the enemy built mud castle walls and batteries. A little before, they had made a surprise attack on Sidaohezi at predawn and perpetrated a bestial outrage of burning the village and murdering the sleeping people right and left.

In the village there were more than 150 Korean residents, and an underground revolutionary organization had struck deep roots, rallying almost all the people. They had undertaken difficult and risky work for national liberation, and at the time of the attack on Luozigou in 1934, they had brought food and ammunition to the KPRA over a long distance of 8 kilometres.

Having learned of this tragedy, the great leader felt a great pain in his heart, and ordered his unit to annihilate the "Jingan Army", avenge the

victims in Sidaohezi and rouse the local folk's will to fight. We set out in indignation, our hearts bursting with revengeful thoughts.

On arriving in Taipinggou, the great leader held memorial service for the victims which was attended by the members of the KPRA, the bereaved families and many people in Taipinggou and surrounding villages.

The great leader made a memorial address, filled with profound sympathy and indignation, which called on the people to remember the blood of the victims for ever and aroused hatred and anger in their hearts.

After the memorial service our ranks headed for Laoheishan.

Sending more than 300 sturdy armymen with fixed bayonets afar off, the people earnestly asked them to take revenge upon the enemy without fail.

The great leader planned to decoy the Wangbaowan enemy from the strong defence installations and wipe them out. So instead of the frontal attack, his men set an ambush in the Weizigou valley.

Weizigou was queerly shaped. The valley was not very deep and flanked by hills, suitable for ambush, and a stream was flowing through it. A ridge, more than 600 metres above sea level, stood at its entrance which led to Weizigou. If the ridge was defended, the enemy would be like a rat in a trap when he entered the valley.

Half of the unit force took its position on the southern slope of the hill and the rest on the opposite slope. Some of our force were posted in the ridge at the entrance to Weizigou to intercept the attacking enemy from slipping away.

When combat preparations were made, the respected leader sent a company-size decoy force. The decoy party went into Wangbaowan at dawn. Disguised as mountain rebels it took out several straw bags of millet from the landlords' storehouses, and started on its way back, carrying the grain by five oxen.

The landlords reported it to the Jingan Army and asked it to make a quick pursuit and take back their grain.

The Jingan Army which used to despise the mountain rebels came in pursuit immediately. With scouts in front, an enemy company equipped with mortars and heavy machine guns, came into the Weizigou valley following the withdrawing decoy party.

Sharing the deep anger of our parents, brothers and sisters, we clutched our rifles.

When the enemy came into our ambush, a signal shot rang out through the valley. It was from the great leader.

The Japanese instructor on horseback was the first to fall down to the ground. There was nowhere to hide or run away. At our first blow, the enemy suffered heavy casualties, and the survivors got into a flurry.

The great leader who had been watching the battle issued an order to charge.

A bugle sounded, the members of the People's Revolutionary Army rushed down at the charge, shouting "Hurrah!"

"Down with Japanese imperialism!"

"Lay down arms, then you will be spared!"

Faced by our militancy, the enemy dared not resist and surrendered.

Thanks to the superb combat direction of the great leader, the ambush operation came to a quick end. In this battle we captured trench mortars, heavy and light machine guns, more than 100 rifles and revolvers, tens of shells, thousands of rounds of bullets and more than ten war horses, and killed, wounded or took prisoner over 100 enemy troops.

The respected leader conducted the work with the prisoners in person. They were treated with leniency. With tears in their eyes, they assured that they would no longer serve Japanese imperialism as stooges. The prisoners were sent back home with travelling expenses.

The resounding victory in the Laoheishan Battle wreaked the people's vengeance upon the Jingan Army, raised their revolutionary enthusiasm and heightened the morale of our armymen. It also carried a great significance in strengthening our armaments on the eve of the march into north Manchuria.

We returned victoriously to Taipinggou. Upon seeing our ranks equipped with trench mortars, heavy machine guns and many new-type rifles, the villagers gathered that we had won a brilliant victory. The news instantly spread, and people came running from the nearby villages.

The respected leader ordered his men to take a few days' rest in Taipinggou and the neighbouring villages. In the houses where the armymen were quartered, the lights were burning till late at night. Though tired from the day-long field work, the peasants listened to

our story without noticing the lapse of time. This acted as a mass political work propagating the great leader's brilliant art of command, the invincibility of the KPRA under his leadership and the certain victory of our revolutionary cause.

The people applauded in delight:

"General Kim Il Sung paid off our old scores."

"Thank you, dear General!"

Choked with emotion, they voiced their adoration for the great leader.

The next day, too, stories about the Laoheishan Battle went round among the villagers.

That day witnessed an impressive happening which greatly moved the armymen and people. It was about the great leader's call on the old Cho Taek Ju's family and his solicitude for them.

The old man had treated the great leader suffering from chill on the way back from the first march into north Manchuria in his solitary hut in the Laoye Range. On his advice that time the old man and his family had moved to Taipinggou and farmed for a landlord.

Having learned of this, the great leader laid aside his work and called at the old man's house.

"Oh, dear General!"

"Father! How do you do?"

The respected leader hugged the old man, who had almost stumbled out of the house and exchanged happy greetings with him.

The old man was infinitely happy to welcome him again in his house. Ever since he had sent off the ailing respected leader from the lonely hut in the Laoye Range, the old man had ardently longed for him in his heart.

The day before the old man, among the welcoming people, had immediately spotted the respected leader returning from the victorious Laoheishan Battle. But he had not liked to go forward to address him or detain him for his personal pleasure, because he knew that the leader was busy in a great cause.

Now the unexpected visit seemed like a dream.

The respected leader asked how the old man was getting along, and taught him the way to live on. Concerned about the ailing son of the old man the leader felt his forehead, and secretly stuck a large sum of money under his pillow before leaving.

Still concerned, the great leader sent the old man a white horse captured in the battle.

The man who took the horse to the old man said, as he handed over the reins:

"This horse was captured in the Laoheishan Battle. Comrade Commander would like you to accept it as a gift.

"He asked me to tell you that though the horse was a bit thin you could feed it well to use it for grinding grain or ploughing the fields, thereby doing good farming."

The reins in his hand, the old man stood rooted to the spot, speechless. He felt a lump rise in his throat. His life-time desire to have his own ox for farming came true, thanks to the respected leader.

Never for a moment afterwards did old Cho Taek Ju and his family forget the great leader's infinite solicitude, using the horse in the field.

Busy as he was hastening preparations for the march into north Manchuria, the great leader organized and directed the battle in the Dongnancha field.

There was a solitary house in this field, and the old couple, its owners, were under suspicion. The house was situated at a corner of the road between the guerrilla zone and the enemy-held area, and our men would frequently stay there, during which they would be raided by the enemy. The underground revolutionary organization, therefore, had long kept a watchful eye on this house.

Some time after our unit's return from the Laoheishan Battle, the revolutionary organization there sent us a message that when a small group of the KPRA happened to stay in this house, its members received a surprise attack and had casualties, and asked for prompt countermeasures.

At the loss of revolutionary comrades, anger glared in the eyes of our armymen. The great leader, informed of this incident, and after a moment's thought, organized the battle in person. He attached a particular significance to this operation, though small in scale, in order to

safeguard the local underground revolutionary organizations, and stop the manoeuvres of those in cahoots with the enemy, because his unit would shortly start out.

In accordance with his detailed plan of operations, a KPRA unit left for the solitary hut in Dongnancha field. Upon arriving at the hill behind the field, the unit lay in ambush in a favourable spot at the entrance to the valley and sent a man to the house. He called for the master and went in. Saying that more than ten members of the KPRA were in the back hill, he asked the old couple to cook food for them.

The old man and woman agreed with pleasure. The old woman fussed, washing rice and stoking fire, and the old man went out pretending to fetch firewood. He could be found nowhere, so our man told the crone to prepare food quickly, as his comrades would be brought in soon and got out of the house.

Some time passed.

As was expected by the great leader, 60 to 70 enemy troops rushed across the Dongnancha field and ran into the valley where the lone hut was situated. Having received information from the old man, the enemy rushed out of breath to the hut, as if to get a windfall, and fell straight into our ambush.

When the enemy was within range, we opened fire all at once. All the enemy troops were wiped out in an instant. Only one enemy soldier ran away with life and limb, throwing out his rifle and outfit.

The operation which annihilated the enemy and brought us many weapons and ammunition undoubtedly proved that the old couple were enemy agents, and we insisted that they should be finished off.

The great leader, however, told us not to do so. He anticipated that the enemy himself would deal with them because he had sustained heavy casualties.

Sure enough, the old couple was arrested and taken away by the enemy. The Japanese Garrison tied them up, tortured them, asking how they had communicated with the KPRA to get many of their troops killed, and shot them to death in the end.

This fact brought the enemy agents and even the wavering elements to realize that service for the Japanese would give them nothing but death, and made them avoid becoming enemy stooges.

In this connection, the respected leader said:

"If we do away with the old couple, thoughtlessly, out of indignation, we shall achieve nothing much.

"If we arrest and kill them to avenge our dead revolutionary comrades, the enemy may make a vile propaganda that the KPRA murders the people. We, therefore, must make the enemy kill them by himself. Then, the enemy will lose many of his stooges and his agents won't act willingly, and the underground revolutionary organizations will find it far easier to carry on their activities even after we leave."

All preparations for the march into north Manchuria went ahead smoothly.

The people in Taipinggou and Luozigou prepared quantities of provisions for us. They made lots of rice cakes, carted them out to the mountains for drying, and made plenty of parched rice flour.

When we were about to start, a report came from a lookout post that a large enemy force was crossing over the Dahuoshaopu River.

The enemy's intention was to take revenge for his crushing defeat in Laoheishan and Dongnancha field and get back the lost trench mortars and heavy machine guns.

The great leader ordered his men to climb up the hill behind Taipinggou. When we reached the shoulder of the hill, the enemy was crossing the river by boat.

The great leader ordered gunners to fire the trench mortars. With loud blasts, columns of water went up and the enemy boats capsized in midstream.

Greatly alarmed, the enemy soldiers fled, lamenting: "The communist army is a gallant force. A few days ago it captured trench mortars and now the guns hit us.... Really wonderful."

When the enemy had been repulsed, the great leader organized the expeditionary force. It consisted of six companies active in Wangqing, two companies in Hunchun, part of Independent Regiment and a company of the Young Volunteer Army. He ordered it to start out.

With the wrench of parting, the people in Taipinggou and the neighbouring villages stood for a long time to give us a send-off.

We also felt a pang of regret at leaving the Tuman River area, yet marched with brisk steps looking forward to the day when we would taste

the sweetness of reunion in the liberated country.

Under the command of the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung, legendary hero and ever-victorious, iron-willed brilliant commander, the main force of the KPRA set out again on the long march into north Manchuria.

(2) CROSSING THE LAOYE RANGE

Three days later the expeditionary force arrived at the foot of the Laoye Range via Shitouhezi, Sidaohezi and Barengou.

The Laoye Range separating north from east Manchuria was high and rugged, and covered with primeval forests. The expeditionary force marched in single file. Fallen trees, measuring arm's spans in girth, and different kinds of vines were coiled up. The march was arduous. The company in front cut its way through, making a track for the horses carrying trench mortars, heavy machine guns and shells. It had to clear bushes and vines with bayonets and make a detour when the going was difficult.

Though the march continued for several hours, the highest peak did not come in sight. The end of the file was invisible, as a dense mist was hovering underfoot.

An order relayed from the front that the column should close up, because clouds were gathering and I(O Jin U) passed it on to the man behind.

Soon the ranks were engulfed in clouds. Only the back of the man in front was dimly visible. Whenever we breathed in, damp air rushed into our lungs, making it hard to breathe.

As always the great leader mingled himself with his men on an arduous march. Despite his fatigue he went to and fro between the file, gingering up his men. He who had forced his way through the forest to the head of the column went to the Second Company and encouraged it.

"The Second Company which had been renowned over the guerrilla zones belies its fame...", he said with smile to Political Instructor Choe

Chun Guk who was leading the company.

"No, our company won't lag behind," replied Choe Chun Guk, determined not to be left behind by any other company.

Thus encouraged, the Second Company shinned up the steep mountain with redoubled vigour.

When he found a man shuffling along at the tail of the column, the respected leader went over to him, took over his outfit, and supported him as he walked alongside.

Deriving fresh strength, the men crossed the steep range with fortitude. Though the march was arduous, all the men were in high spirits, and laughter and singing never ceased.

The expeditionary force of the KPRA reached the valley of Erdaohezi, Ningan County.

Upon arriving in north Manchuria, the great leader sent a company-size force in the direction of Shandongtun to establish contacts with the guerrilla units there, while making a detailed study of the ideological trends of the people and the movements of the enemy.

He rested his men in Erdaohezi and Sandaohezi for military and political studies till information came.

Since the people's revolutionary awareness was low and the local areas were unfamiliar, it was necessary to get the men fully prepared to deftly carry on positive military and political activities under any circumstances. In accordance with the programme drawn up by the great leader we carried on those studies. As there were recruits, the main stress was placed on shooting practice and military exercise, and the political study dealt chiefly with the problems related to the accomplishment of the immediate revolutionary tasks—the obtaining situation, the general conditions of north Manchuria, the savageness of Japanese imperialism, the miserable plight of the people, the lofty mission of the KPRA and the method of work among the masses.

While guiding the military and political studies, the great leader paid deep attention to reinforcing the companies, the basic unit of the army's military and political actions, and, in particular, to strengthening the unity of the ranks in ideology and purpose.

Only when the entire ranks were firmly united politically and ideologically, was it possible to overcome all difficulties and successfully

achieve the purpose of the expedition under the unfavourable conditions where they were not familiar with north Manchuria and the mass foundations were weak.

Especially since the companies were reinforced with many recruits on the eve of the march, it was most vital for increasing their militant capacity to have correct comradeship and cement unity.

One day the respected leader went to a company from Hunchun district, and guided a meeting of its Party cell.

The meeting criticized the practices impairing the comradely unity on trifling matters.

The secretary of the company Party cell first made a report on the Party life of the cell members and then they took the floor. They blamed themselves and others for their shortcomings in the relations among the comrades.

Having listened carefully to the report and the speeches, the great leader gave precious advice which acted as a guideline in the life inside the Party cell of the company. Noting that the meeting was opportune, and that it was very important to criticize in time all shortcomings, he said:

"Sound criticism not only corrects the errors of comrades in time but also gives lessons to other comrades. It, however, is not healthy criticism to exaggerate trifles and pick only faults and censure them like a fault-finder.

"Sometimes differences crop up in a family. That may happen when each member insists that his opinion is correct. Here, we come from different localities and there are recruits who are still unfamiliar with us. Under these circumstances, an improper emphasis of minor things may cause mutual misunderstanding. The problems that were spoken about just now rose therefrom, I think. Therefore, when criticism is offered with strong Party spirit, popular spirit, communist humanity and revolutionary obligation, it is like medicine which cures the maladies of comrades. Then the persons criticized will accept the criticism readily and rectify their faults, even if it is as carping as bitter medicine."

Then he continued in real earnest: **"All of us left our parents, wives and children behind and joined the KPRA for the sake of the revolution, and for the overthrow of Japanese imperialism, the restoration of our own country and for the building of a society where all the people live happily, didn't we? What did we think that time? Did we not think just of the revolution? Though**

from different places, we have come here with a single purpose and idea, haven't we? If we have, our purpose and idea are the same, and there could be no other objectives and idea. Is there any greater honour than to work for the revolution?"

His speech deeply impressed all those present. Those who had been criticized or not, fully realized that they had not thought and lived in accordance with his instructions. Their heads lowered, they graved the profound meanings of his words on their hearts, with remorse.

Touching upon the ways to create a sound atmosphere inside the ranks and strengthen the unity among the comrades in ideology and purpose, the great leader noted that the most important thing was to trust and love the comrades and that without this comradely affection and assistance it was impossible to share weal and woe on the rugged road of revolution and victoriously attain the ultimate goal. He continued, **"We must bear in mind that the communists are men of noble character and the most noble humanists in the world."**

In conclusion he gave earnest instructions that everybody should strive to cultivate a lofty quality and that all the Party members should make it a rule to offer criticism and mutual assistance for unity in ideology and purpose and in action.

After the great leader's kind-hearted advice, the life of Party members in the company underwent a complete change and the whole company was pervaded with revolutionary comradeship. Those who had felt awkward to each other became more intimate, their faces brightened, and any slight tendency that might weaken the unity and cohesion of the ranks disappeared.

The companies grew stronger from day to day thanks to the minute guidance of the respected leader.

The political and ideological unity of the ranks became further cemented and all the members grew into able political activists and model combatants.

Toward the end of the military and political studies, a report came from the company dispatched to Sandongtun that contact had been established with the guerrilla units operating in the Ningan area.

The great leader advanced his expeditionary force to Sandongtun. It was late July.

The local guerrillas gave a rousing welcome to the great leader. Many of them entertained high respect for the great leader since they had received his education at the time of the first march into north Manchuria, and those who met him for the first time were deeply impressed by his high reputation.

He exchanged warm greetings with the welcoming officers of the local guerrilla units. We, too, had a significant meeting with the comrades there who were fighting for the same revolutionary objectives.

They showed us all sincerity. They had long made preparations to welcome the great leader and his men to north Manchuria.

We were billeted in the houses of Sandongtun. The village people, however, were not so delighted, because they had not been under revolutionary influence and knew little of the KPRA.

No sooner had we put down our packs than we started to give a helping hand with the household chores. We respected the old people and warmly loved the little children. The popular character of the KPRA attracted the hearts of the people. The children called us "uncle". In the evening we conducted simple political work among people. Songs were heard from some houses.

The respected leader had an intimate conversation with the commanding officers of the guerrilla units to get a good grasp of their activities.

The local guerrilla units had grown beyond recognition after his first march into north Manchuria the previous year.

He had rendered them sincere assistance during his first expedition. Afterwards, too, he had called the commanders here to the Tuman River guerrilla zone to give them lectures, take thém round for inspection, and sent a Children's Corps art troupe from the Wangqing guerrilla zone to heighten their morale.

However, the guerrilla units here had not struck their roots deep among the people, and their military actions had not expanded largely in face of the desperate "punitive operations" of the enemy.

Having understood the details of the local conditions the great leader highly assessed their successes scored over the past year, and had a serious discussion on how to activate the joint anti-Japanese struggle. He gave valuable instructions as regards joint operations, the building of mass

foundations for the anti-Japanese armed struggle, and other immediate problems, and taught specific ways for tackling these problems.

On the other hand, he saw that mass political work was strengthened so as to plant the seeds of revolution among the people in and around Sandongtun.

Competent military and political cadres were sent to Sandongtun and the neighbouring villages. By varied forms and methods such as story-telling, visual-aid propaganda, massive agitation, and the teaching of songs, they induced the people to have an explicit understanding of the lofty mission of the KPRA, the correctness of our revolutionary cause, the inevitability of the defeat of Japanese imperialism and the miserable conditions of the stateless people.

Moved by the noble popular character of the KPRA and the persistent explanation of its men, the people changed their views about us and entertained a good feeling towards us gradually.

One day a report came that a large enemy force was coming to attack Sandongtun.

Upon finding the expeditionary force of the KPRA led by the great leader operating in north Manchuria, the enemy put in action his armed forces from Mudanjiang, Dongjingcheng and the neighbouring places.

Informed of the enemy's movements, the great leader worked out a plan of operations and let more than 200 local guerrillas in Sandongtun take part in the operations. He wanted their morale heightened in the actual battle.

Anticipating that fighting in reliance upon the walled village of Sandongtun would be favourable for defeating the enemy, but hurt the people, he advanced our unit into the western gorge.

When the unit got there, the great leader quickly deployed his men. No one knew when he had studied the terrain.

The main force of the expeditionary unit took positions in the north-western knoll, and two companies were posted in the southwestern hill across the river. The local guerrillas were deployed in the rise 200 metres away from the village.

Unlike the terrain along the Tuman River, the tops of the knolls were flat here in Ningan. Considering the topographical features and the future action, we dug our firing positions and camouflaged them well.

Our men firmly pledged to win their first battle in north Manchuria in cooperation with the local guerrillas and display our militant power.

Around noon, the enemy came from the direction of Ningan. His force was more than 800 cavalrymen consisting of troops of the Japanese imperialist garrison and the puppet Manchukuo Army, and policemen.

The front unit of the enemy advanced to Sandongtun and the remaining troops began to climb up the knoll where our main force lay in ambush.

The great leader who had been watching for a chance ordered his men to fire. All of a sudden, the gorge which had been full of the shouts of enemy troops and clouds of dust rang with the rattle of machine guns. The enemy troops who were climbing up the knoll fell under the shower of bullets with their horses.

The great leader ordered his men to keep up the intensity of firing lest the enemy should stick to the riverside and offer resistance.

The enemy did not dare to attack the line held by our force. Now, some of the enemy troops put up resistance, while the remaining majority was going to make a detour to the northwestern and southwestern knolls. His frontal attack frustrated, the enemy attempted to press on from both flanks and behind.

But their attempt was shattered by the local guerrillas and our two companies the great leader had deployed beforehand.

With no prospects of victory as a result of the repeated setbacks, the enemy concentrated fire on the northwestern knoll where our main force was posted. They kept firing, without making an attack.

It was to gain time for their reinforcements to come.

Having seen through this scheme, the great leader ordered his men to wipe out the near enemy troops with rifle shots, and send mortar shells on those firing random shots, hanging about in the distant spots.

With loud explosions, clouds of dust went up from the enemy positions. Under the hail of concentrated fire from mortars and rifles, the enemy troops could not raise their heads, and swarmed to this or that place only to fall down.

Most of the enemy force was annihilated.

The sun dipped behind the west hills. The survivors fled under cover of darkness.

We won a great victory in the Sandongtun Battle with no losses.

This shining victory greatly enhanced the morale of the local guerrilla units and strengthened the militant solidarity with them. It dealt a staggering blow at the enemy who had been determined on "punitive operations" and bridled his reckless acts.

The victory also increased the great leader's reputation among the people here and deepened their trust in the KPRA under his command.

Especially, the local guerrillas and people were greatly impressed by the noble character and uncommon intelligence of the respected leader who had evacuated his men from the favourable village lest the people should suffer in the battle, and wiped out the enemy with superb art of command and precise operations.

When we entered a village the next morning, the people warmly congratulated us on our victory and rendered unreserved assistance to the guerrillas. It was in striking contrast with what we had witnessed earlier in north Manchuria.

After the Sandongtun Battle, the great leader pushed ahead vigorously with the military and political actions of the KPRA. The flames of revolution engulfed tranquil north Manchuria.

The enemy started large-scale "punitive operations" against the KPRA, clamouring that "public peace" could not be secured unless its military and political activities were checked in north Manchuria.

Our military and political actions struck against a snag.

In order to provide against the obtaining situation, the great leader called a meeting of cadres of the north Manchurian expeditionary force of the KPRA in Sandaohezi, Ningan County, in August of the same year, and put forward the policy of independent activities of the units.

It was the most correct policy which enabled us to disperse the concentrated enemy force and hit it successively in broader areas to put him in greater chaos and on the defensive, and successfully attain the objectives of the expeditionary campaign in north Manchuria.

After the meeting, separate actions started.

In accordance with the great leader's policy the main force of the expeditionary unit was to operate in the direction of Emu, Comrade An Gil-led unit in Wangqing-Hunchun area in east Manchuria and another unit in Ningan-Muling-Linkou area.

After these units started out, the great leader, leading the main force of the expeditionary unit, headed for Emu in face of the onrushing enemy troops. We had to overcome lots of difficulties on our way to Emu. The greatest trouble was to cross the Jingbo Lake. Travellers from Ningan to Emu had to get across the deep and wide lake or go around it.

In order to bar the KPRA's advance into Emu, the enemy brought together all the boats on the lake in one place and put them under tight control. At the same time the enemy troops lay in ambush in double and triple lines on the north and south shores, a detour round the lake.

In anticipation of this difficult situation the great leader, while in Sandaohezi, had sent out a scout party to find out details of the enemy movements. Since the enemy reinforcements increased greatly, he made up his mind to cross the lake, because to go round it was not only disadvantageous to our operations but also needed much time which would delay the advance into Emu.

He calculated that no matter how strict the enemy cordon might be, there would be a blind side and that drawing on this weak point, would make it possible to cross the lake.

His calculation proved correct. The result of the reconnaissance showed that there were weak links in the deployment of enemy forces and their guarding. Though the watch and control of the lake was tight it was slack at dawn. Capitalizing on this weakness the unit had to get across the lake.

For this operation the great leader sent an advance party to Xiaoshanzuizi which was out of sight from the enemy base and where the width of the lake was narrow.

He took in the geographical features of Xiaoshanzuizi and a gap in the deployment of enemy forces, and designated it as a point for crossing, though it needed going round a bit. The advance party, in contact with the people there, prepared ferry boats on the quiet, while keeping a watchful eye on the enemy's movements.

Upon receiving a report from the advance party that preparations for crossing were over the great leader moved his men into Xiaoshanzuizi.

It was at the dead of night when the chirp of insects was drowned in darkness. The ranks arrived there on the quiet.

Then he sent a covering force to the shoulder of the mountain east of Xidapu and atop the hill northeast of Xiaoshanzuizi. Its task was to ensure the crossing, guarding against the enemy in case of emergency.

According to the order of priority established by him, the expeditionary force got aboard the boats in groups. The whole unit crossed the lake in perfect order.

Standing on the shore of the lake, he got his men to ferry over the lake, and he himself was the last to get into a boat with the covering force which had been withdrawn.

The ferry remained quiet, as if keeping the nighttime crossing of the large force of the KPRA an eternal secret.

This operation, quick and stealthy, was kept secret from both the enemy and the people for a long time.

The enemy made vain attempts to arrest our advance into Emu. When the enemy was hanging about on a shore of the lake, we got across the water to the opposite side to operate under more favourable conditions. Thanks to the great leader's elaborate plan of operations and deft command, the venture was successful. The eastern sky began to turn bright when the whole unit got across the Jingbo Lake safely into the land of Emu.

There was an unforgettable, impressive story during our march into Emu.

It was when we were far away from Sandongtun.

When we were about to enter a flat place after coming out of the wooded district, the respected leader ordered us to get through this open in the evening. We rested in the forest till dusk, and resumed our march when it was dark.

When we were entering a defile, a soft summer night breeze wafted the sweet fragrance of melons.

"What a sweet smell of melons," someone whispered.

"Right. The fruit seems ripe," another man responded.

Whisper ran through the marching column. It recalled the tasty melon mothers had given them at the willow-fringed dyke during break after weeding on a hot summer day.

As the ranks moved on, the fresh and sweet fragrance drifted further, their mouths watering.

Yet no one showed any sign of it, as the march was afoot.

All of a sudden, the marching ranks halted. We stood still, awaiting a further direction. We thought that something might happen, because rest was unlikely to be allowed in this flat open.

Presently, an order to rest came from the front.

The respected leader issued it unusually, in sympathy with his men who were talking to each other about the melon, smelling its fragrance.

He sent for the owner of the melon field who was asked how much he would charge for all the melons in the field. The old owner asked some 50 *won,* but the great leader paid him 100 *won* for all the melons. And he let the men help themselves.

They were delighted. We ate our fill with gusto.

The respected leader gave each word of his men importance and even scrutinized their faces to read their minds. His fatherly affection was the source of inexhaustible strength which enabled us to unyieldingly overcome any difficulties and ordeals and a great example teaching the commanding officers of the KPRA to know the soldiers' feelings well and conduct the work accordingly.

Even now we remember the episode of the melons. We will never forget the melons which gave immeasurable strength to our marching soldiers and the fatherly leader's warm love enshrined in each of the fruits.

Thanks to this deep affection, we were able to conduct brisk military and political actions in high spirits in the unexplored Emu district.

(3) AT THE NEW AREA OF ACTIVITIES

The expeditionary force operated in Emu for a little over four months from the early autumn of 1935.

So far Emu had not been under much revolutionary influence and remained a hangout of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units. The Wu Yicheng unit from Luozigou and other Chinese units were stationed here. Still affected by the militarist habit, they were engaged in the

arbitrary plunder of the people's property, without having any good fight with the Japanese imperialists.

The people of Emu, therefore, were antagonistic toward the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units, and their anti-Japanese consciousness was very low.

Availing himself of these conditions, the enemy spread false propaganda about the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units and the KPRA among the people in his efforts to alienate the Korean people from the Chinese. In addition, a large number of enemy troops were hurled in "punitive operations" against the Chinese units.

Having studied the actual conditions in all details the great leader made up his mind to let the KPRA carry out powerful military and political actions in the Emu area, to hit hard at the enemy, encourage the demoralized Chinese units, bring the people to revolutionary awakening and consolidate the mass foundations of the anti-Japanese armed struggle.

For this it was imperative above all to deal a hard blow at the enemy's attempts to suppress the people as well as at the "punitive operations" against the Chinese units, and demonstrate the militant strength of the KPRA.

The great leader planned to conduct in Qinggouzi the first mopping-up operation against the enemy after the expeditionary force's advance into Emu.

A "punitive force" of the Japanese aggressor army sent from Emu and a Manchukuo Army unit were stationed in Qinggouzi, and more than 50 policemen were temporarily stationed in the neighbouring Village No. 6. The police and the armed Self-defence Corps were entrenched in Village Nos.5 and 7 and other nearby villages.

At a predawn in September of the same year the respected leader and his unit went into Village No. 4 which was in contact with us, and where the Anti-Japanese Association was in existence.

He called in the head of the ten-family neighbourhood who was an underground organizer and told him to go to Qinggouzi and inform that the KPRA was having rest in Village No.4 and was expected to leave for Village No.5 around six o'clock in the morning.

When the neighbourhood chief left, he sent a company-size force in

the direction of Village No.5, telling it to lie in ambush in a favourable place and hit the enemy in action.

Besides, he dispatched another company to Village No.7 on a mission that a decoy party be sent to lure the police from Village No.6 around six o'clock in the morning and wipe it out.

Then, he led the main force onto the highest hill which was skirted around by the road to Emu. He had a clever plan of operations to rout the enemy stationed in Qinggouzi and Village No.6 and annihilate a large enemy force which was expected to rush from Emu upon receiving an urgent report.

Day broke and the eastern sky was dyed in rosy glow, when loud gun reports were heard from Village Nos. 5 and 7. As was anticipated, the enemy troops were lured from Qinggouzi and Village No.6 into our ambush. Two companies of the puppet Manchukuo Army and one platoon of the Japanese aggressor army from Qinggouzi were routed.

On receiving a secret information from the chief of the ten-family neighbourhood early in the morning, troops of the Manchukuo Army had been driven out as a shield, with the Japanese aggressor forces at their heels. When they came into our ambush, the Manchukuo troops were allowed to pass and the Japanese aggressors were brought under the shower of bullets. We shouted at the Manchukuo Army:

"You wretched Manchukuo soldiers who are dragged about by the Japs! You are Chinese. The KPRA crushes the Japanese imperialists, not the Chinese!"

"Don't be traitors! Lay down your arms and return to your homes!"

This proved effective. The Manchukuo soldiers took to flight in face of the instant defeat of the Japanese troops who boasted of being the "invincible Imperial Army".

On the other hand, the police force was allured out of Village No.6 and stamped out by our company which had been sent to Village No.7.

Thanks to the great leader's unusual ingenuity and superb tactics, the enemy forces in and around Qinggouzi were wiped out all at once in different places.

Battered and bruised, the enemy reported their defeat to Emu.

As the great leader had expected, more than 200 enemy troops from the Emu county seat rushed to Qinggouzi, raising clouds of dust. It seemed

they were on the move on his order!

Report came from the observation post that a long column of enemy troops had left Emu. The respected leader ordered the company which had decoyed and wiped out the enemy from Village Nos. 5 and 7 to quickly withdraw and take positions in the left shoulder of the hill where our main force lay in ambush. Our forces which had been dispersed temporarily were assembled again to defeat the enemy.

The enemy hardly imagined that we were waiting for their advance at a place far off Village Nos. 5 and 7 where battles had taken place just before. They were given an unexpected big blow at the unfavourable point and more than half of their forces were put out of action.

The great leader promptly moved his men to the right and the left to hit at the survivors from the front and the flanks. The enemy troops who had been saved from the first blow attempted to fight back, but were routed before they could use their weapons. In this battle more than a hundred enemy troops were killed, and several others took to flight.

Thanks to the great leader's brilliant command we won a great victory in the Qinggouzi Battle. In this operation he adopted bold and agile guerrilla tactics: Enemy forces at different places were lured and routed separately and both the stationary troops and the reinforcements were attacked through the prompt dispersion and assembly of our forces. Thus, he administered a staggering blow to the enemy and fully demonstrated the invincibility of the KPRA.

After the Qinggouzi Battle, the expeditionary forces of the KPRA attacked from ambush the enemy's "punitive forces" near Nantianmen, thereby wiping out numerous officers and soldiers including a cavalry regimental commander of the Manchukuo Army and destroying two lorries, and severely battered the enemy in encounters in the neighbourhood of Beishan, Tangshuihezi, and Laotougou. In October the expeditionary forces annihilated the mixed Japanese-Manchukuo unit in Maligou and giving no breathing space, raided and hit the Japanese garrison again in Sandaogou.

Shaken with fear by the powerful blows of the KPRA, the enemy were reinforced on a large scale to mount a concentrated attack on the expeditionary forces from the front and rear, and the right and left.

The great leader saw through the enemy's plan in advance. He

dispersed the expeditionary forces to deal continuous blows at the enemy from different sides by making sudden appearance in the east or the west.

The units of the KPRA fought separate battles near Laotougou and in Xinxingtun, Liuchaigou and other places, driving the enemy into utter chaos.

Due to the multifarious tactics and incessant blows of the KPRA's expeditionary forces led by the great leader, the enemy trembled with horror and uneasiness.

The enemy lost his wits and was a sorry sight. The "coffin comedy" occurred at that time. Two Japanese soldiers who had narrowly escaped death were looking for a place to hide. They happened to find a coffin in a farmyard and scrambled into it. Here is another occurrence: A Japanese machine gunner was so frightened by the attack of our army that he suddenly got up from his bed one night and shouted, "The communist army!" firing his machine gun at his fellow-soldiers at random and killing many. Shocked by this another Japanese soldier flung off his clothes. Shouting frenziedly, "The communist army! The communist army!" he ran naked through the streets to the disgrace of the "Great Empire of Japan".

Having suffered one crushing setback after another, the enemy troops could not act freely even in the daytime. On the contrary, the people who had once quailed before the enemy were awakened and the timid Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units gingered up.

The flames of revolution spread over Emu where the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units had been hiding themselves while the enemy lorded it over as he wished.

Under the wise guidance of the great leader, the expeditionary forces briskly conducted the organizational and political work among the masses along with military actions.

On entering the Emu district, he rested his men in a forest and called a meeting of commanders.

At the meeting he taught: **"We are exploring the Emu area for the first time, and many people here, duped by the vile propaganda of Japanese imperialism, misunderstand the KPRA. Therefore we ought to have proper contacts with the people."**

He instructed that the KPRA should show by practical actions that it

was a real army of the people.

The KPRA men were true to his teachings. That day they marched into a village called Talazhan to have a few days' rest for the first time in Emu.

We were quartered in the village houses, and relieved ourselves of our outfit. Tired though we were from the march, we helped the masters with their chores. The village people who had been annoyed by the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units and outraged by the Japanese troops and Manchukuo Army and police opened their eyes with wonder and doubted if there were such an army in the world.

At first the villagers were cold, but their attitude began to change gradually. Especially what happened in the home of a newly-wed couple—the husband was a lumberjack—in the evening moved the village people greatly.

Several armymen were billeted in this house. After exchanging a few words with the master, they went outdoors and prepared their beds in a shed. The couple was surprised, and invited them to rest in the warm room. But the men refused.

Then they brought out their only quilt for the armymen. This too was not accepted. The young couple had intended to spend the night at a relative's, so that the armymen could stay indoors without being embarrassed. The armymen quickly sensed this and went outdoors with their knapsacks and said earnestly:

"We are tired. Please allow us to spend the night in the shed in peace."

The young couple said nothing and went back indoors. They sat up all night, moved by the lofty love of the KPRA men for the people.

This occasioned a radical change in the people's attitude to the KPRA. The villagers who had not been confiding but kept aloof from us became as intimate as family members.

Such incidents took place wherever the KPRA was stationed.

We went deeper among the people to enlighten them, respecting their customs and assisting in their hard work. Comparing our own past to the life of the local people, we explained for what we are making revolution and how we should defeat Japanese imperialism and build a new society.

Especially the propaganda about the worthy life in the Tuman River guerrilla zones established by the respected leader, his uncommon

intelligence and brilliant tactics and his lofty virtues and intense attachment to the armymen and the people increased the public respect for him, and strengthened their will to wage the revolutionary struggle and their belief in the revolutionary victory.

The victorious combat operations and positive political work of the KPRA gradually drew the people into different revolutionary organizations and activated their revolutionary struggle. In step with their revolutionization and organization, the people's support and assistance to the KPRA increased, which helped strengthen our armed struggle steadily.

The respected leader persistently educated his men to acquire a revolutionary point of view toward the masses and have an ardent love for the people, and directed them to do skilful work with the people in conformity with their consciousness and preparedness. He himself showed the outstanding examples of revolutionary work method and fraternization.

Wherever he went, he had frank talks with the people to grasp the village conditions and livelihood, and explain the general situation and the inevitability of the defeat of the Japanese imperialists. He so inflamed the people that they came out in the struggle against the enemy.

He regarded the people's sufferings as his own and wanted to be more helpful to them. His indescribable solicitude moved the people beyond measure and made our work with them more successful.

The following incident occurred in our encounter with the enemy in a gorge near Heishixiang.

The great leader quickly moved his men to a favourable place to launch a surprise attack. Our powerful blow confused the enemy, who charged again, using the young people from Heishixiang as a shield. The youth had been forced to carry goods for the enemy. The enemy were crafty enough to know that the KPRA would not hurt the people.

After studying the situation, the great leader ordered his men to stop firing, and sent out some of them onto a roundabout way to mount a flank attack and save the young villagers.

When firing stopped, the enemy troops who were studying the ridge held by our forces attempted to charge. But they were unexpectedly attacked on the flank, with many casualties.

The young men were rescued. Ascribing it to the respected leader, they volunteered to join the KPRA, tears in their eyes. He praised and accepted their request readily.

At that time an old man who was said to live in Heishixiang was brought along from a lookout post. Hearing the shots, the old man had rushed out in search of his only son who had been forced to carry the baggage of the Japanese garrison. When he saw his son, whom he had given up as dead, sitting by the campfire, the old man came running to him and hugged him. Upon learning how the young men had been rescued and how they had volunteered to join the army, the old man, with tears rolling down his furrowed cheeks, was delighted both at his son's escape from death and his readiness to fight, arms in hand, for the country under the command of General Kim Il Sung.

The old man removed his cotton-padded coat and put it on his son's shoulders. But the son refused to take his father's only dress.

Seeing this, the respected leader told the son to accept the coat and said that even though the coat was worn out, he should not forget the father's deep and warm affection it carried, and remain true to the revolution.

Then he took off his own fur overcoat and put it on the old man's shoulders, saying, **"Old man, put this on, please...."**

The old man did not know what to do and was going to take it off.

The respected leader tenderly took the rough hands of the perturbed old man and asked him again to accept the fur overcoat, feeling sorry for his failure to provide warm cotton-padded clothes to the old people in this severe winter.

The old man, who had been maltreated and despised all through life in the rough foreign land, no longer declined, and shed silent tears, deeply moved by the infinite care of the great leader, the sun of the nation.

The son and the armymen shed tears of emotion, as they watched in turn the respected leader wearing thin clothes, exposed to a biting north Manchurian wind, his only fur coat donated, and the old man sobbing over his kindness.

The local people most sincerely respected the great leader who was really devoted to the people and loved them warmly, and did what they could for the sake of the revolution, bearing his instructions deep in mind.

Emu area turned further into a reliable revolutionary base as days went by. The people wanted to be with us longer and everybody gave us disinterested assistance.

It happened a few days before the lunar New Year of 1936. The expeditionary unit was stationed in a village near Guandi. The New Year holiday was close at hand, yet there were no arrangements in the unit. The commanders got nervous, thinking that no matter how difficult the conditions might be, New Year preparations would have been made in the Tuman River guerrilla zones. Some of the recruits and young members showed manifest sign of regret. The commanders suggested to the respected leader that preparations be made for the New Year Day.

After listening to their proposal, he said:

"We are making a revolution now. Our revolutionary struggle defying all difficulties is not for our own comfort and interests, but for the liberation of the fatherland and the happiness and benefit of the people, isn't it?

"Now the absolute majority of the people cannot afford even gruel on holidays, to say nothing of cake and cooked rice, and many people cannot have fine clothes made for their children in the rigours of the cold winter.

"Can we eat up even a grain of the people, instead of helping them?

"In order to relieve the people of this suffering as early as possible, we ought to overthrow Japanese imperialism and liberate our country."

Thus he dissuaded the commanders from making the New Year preparations.

The villagers, however, were hugely delighted to have an opportunity to enjoy the New Year with the great leader, and bustled about preparing a fine feast. Everyone of the villagers invited us to his home for the New Year.

The respected leader was aware of the poor living conditions of the people and earnestly told them not to expend things on the People's Revolutionary Army, though it was good to enjoy the New Year merrily.

The people, however, wanted to make good New Year preparations in token of their sincerity.

Seeing this, the respected leader gave an urgent order that the unit should get ready for the march.

Unaware of the reason, the armymen were very sorry to take a leave

without enjoying the New Year with the people. They thought that the enemy had been sighted.

The people said that since it was an affair of the army, they were helpless but regretfully asked why they were leaving the village on New Year's eve.

That night we reached a deep forest at Huangnihezi, and repaired a log hut used by lumber mill workers and stayed there. Only then did we understand why we had left so suddenly, appreciated anew the respected leader's lofty intention not to cause any trouble to the people.

Yet, some recruits grumbled: "Probably now our folks at home are missing us as they eat stuffed dumpling soup."

The respected leader came out to the campfire we were sitting around, looked at the recruits with smiling eyes and said: **"Holidays are always pleasant for everybody. But how many people can enjoy holidays in our Korea and Manchuria?"** After pointing out the poor living conditions at Guandi, he asked whether their hospitality should have been accepted, though it was sincere.

The recruits made no reply, repenting for misunderstanding his intention.

The respected leader looked round his men for a while, and said that our forces have grown immensely stronger than they had been at the inception of the KPRA.

He continued:

"How could we have grown into a powerful force as we are now? We are troops armed with the Marxist-Leninist ideas, and of the best sons and daughters of the people. We are fighters who do not hesitate to sacrifice our lives for the homeland and the people. The source of our inexhaustible strength lies in our firm unity with the people to share weal and woe together.

"Therefore, we must be always quick and tactful in action. In any circumstance, we must think of the people first, regard their interests as our own, put up with any difficulties and hardships and live in the spirit of sharing joy with the people and going ahead with them. Herein lie our real happiness, pride and hope."

Listening to his words we firmly pledged to be faithful servants of the people as he had told.

Afterwards the people of Guandi came to know why our forces had moved out of their village on the eve of the New Year and retold it long with deep emotion.

The people of Emu harboured an infinite respect and adoration for the great leader who treasured and loved the people so much, and came out as one in the anti-Japanese revolutionary struggle in accordance with his earnest instructions.

Mass organizations of different kinds were formed in Emu County to enlist the broad masses for assistance to the KPRA and reconnaissance of the enemy movements. Workers, who had been forcibly mobilized for the construction of a military road between Guandi and Nanhutou dropped the project with the slogan: "Hands off the shameful construction work against the guerrillas!" and more than 20 workers boycotted forced labour in Mudanjiang village and joined the KPRA. Other bold mass struggles took place one after another.

While taking warm care of the people and awakening and rallying them in the organizations, the great leader exercised great influence and broad-minded generosity to win over the wavering or misled people to a just struggle for the country and the people.

He accorded warm hospitality to the bosses of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units in this locality who came to see him in admiration for the revolutionary influence and militant power of the KPRA, and taught them how to form a united front under the anti-Japanese banner. He himself went to these units and persuaded and encouraged the diffident and irresolute officers and rank-and-file soldiers into positive struggles.

Moreover, he conducted suitable work with the enemy forces and police, and the Self-defence Corps and led many of them onto the road of patriotism.

It was in January 1936 that our expeditionary forces were taking rest at a landlord's in a village near Emu. The snow was waist-deep. At that time a gaudy sleigh escorted by more than ten puppet Manchukuo soldiers drove up to the house, whipping up the snow behind it. Our sentinels posing as hired hands got ready to capture them alive. The sleigh pulled up in front of the house and a middle-aged Chinese lady in gorgeous dress came down and went into the house with the soldiers.

She was the wife of a regimental commander of the puppet

Manchukuo Army in a nearby place and was on her way to her parents' house. She had stopped over for a brief rest as the weather was cold. She and her escorts warmed themselves up in a heated room. After a long while they found out that the servant who had ushered them in was a member of the KPRA. They were pale in surprise.

Upon hearing this, the respected leader called them in. Saying that the KPRA did not harm innocent people, he told the dumb-stricken wife and soldiers to set their mind at ease and warm themselves over the fire and have a cup of hot water as it was cold.

He asked the puppet soldiers where their home villages were, when they had joined the Manchukuo Army and how they felt in the army service.

After listening to their eventful life, he taught that Japanese imperialism should be defeated and the country freed so that they might live in peace and happiness with their parents, wives and children.

Reassured by his sympathetic attitude and logical statements, the regimental commander's wife as well as the puppet soldiers calmed gradually and watched him with a respectful look.

The great leader said: **"Your husband is a regimental commander of the 'Manchukuo Army'. But I don't understand why he should fight us and why he has become a running dog of the Japanese imperialists. I pity your husband who has betrayed his fatherland and nation. Before too late he should get rid of his shameless, stateless life and lead a worthy life."**

He also told her to take good care of her mother and saw to it that they were sent back with their articles and rifles untouched.

As he gave her his visiting card, the great leader told the woman to hand it to her husband and persuade him well.

Upon receiving the card, she was greatly surprised to find out that the man who had treated them so kindly was none other than the great General Kim Il Sung who was respected as a legendary hero among the people, while the Japanese scoundrels and the puppet Manchukuo Army trembled at the mere mention of his name.

"General Kim Il Sung, we've learned that we are taking a wrong road from what you told just now. How can I repay your favour?" the wife of the regimental commander said in a voice trembling with emotion and gratitude.

However, she returned to her husband with her escort instead of visiting her parents' home. On her way home she met her husband. Hearing from the puppet soldier who had fled that his wife had been arrested, he had collected his men and was on his way to rescue her. To his surprise his wife who was believed to have been killed, was returning home, with her goods untouched. He asked in wonder: "What happened?"

"Never mind," she replied. "Let's go back. What we thought so far has been wrong. I'll tell you when we reach home."

Back home, the wife handed over the respected leader's card to her husband and narrated what had happened, and asked him to live a real and proud life as he had told. He was seized with remorse. Some days later, the respected leader received a letter from him in which he said that he had been deceived into misunderstanding the KPRA by the Japanese imperialists and that he was awakened by his instructions. He declared his determination to positively assist the KPRA, though belatedly, and fight with all his might for the great anti-Japanese cause and to save the nation.

He was true to his pledge in the years that followed.

The KPRA grew beyond recognition politically, ideologically and in military technique under the warm care of the respected leader in the six months of brisk activities conducted by its main forces under his command in north Manchuria and in the days of repeated battles, and political and organizational work with the masses and continuous march in the Ningan area across the steep Laoye Range and Emu district beyond the deep Jingbo Lake.

The respected leader did not care about himself but looked after his men with fatherly affection and gave them his warm love.

He would sit by the campfire to tell interesting stories to his men or sing songs to raise their morale. On another occasion he sent his men to bed and dried wet shoes for a young member all through night. His fatherly affection reminds me(O Jin U) of a moving episode.

It was a winter day in the same year.

When our unit was preparing for march after rest in a village the respected leader told us to wear *torogi*, leather winter shoes. I tried it on for the first time. It did not fit me well, loose and slippery. No one knows

when the respected leader saw it. He came over to me and told me to pull off my shoes. Without thinking, I took off one of the shoes and offered it to him. He inspected it, softened the straw taken out of the shoes and padded it again.

I was really ashamed of myself as he was worrying over my *torogi*, and insisted that I should try it for myself.

He smiled tenderly and said: **"Don't persist.... You shouldn't wear *torogi* that way. Spread the straw inside properly and your feet will be warm and steady in your shoes. Take off the other and I'll pad it for you."**

Unwillingly, I took off the other and handed it over to him.

He teased fresh dry straw until it became as soft as cotton, put it into the shoe and spread it evenly. The shoe, thus arranged, fitted me well and made my feet comfortable.

"Does it fit well?" he asked as he watched me stepping forward.

"Exactly," I replied.

With a benign smile on his face, he tapped me genially on the back and helped other members into shoes. My heart stirred uncontrollably as I watched him.

Thanks to this affection and care which reached every aspect of his men's life, we could tide over every trial and difficulty courageously and spread the seeds of revolution everywhere in our great struggle for exploring north Manchuria.

The achievements registered in the six months' victorious military and political actions of the KPRA in north Manchuria bore convincing witness to the correctness of the great leader's strategic policy of relinquishing the guerrilla zones for advancing into wider areas.

The policy outlined at the historic Yaoyinggou Meeting was materialized admirably everywhere the units of the KPRA advanced into the homeland, and south and east Manchuria.

A unit of the KPRA that went into the homeland dealt a heavy military and political blow at the enemy in the border area around Musan district in northern Korea and built up the mass foundations of the anti-Japanese armed struggle. Other units marched to Jiaohe, Dunhua, Fusung and Mengjiang and converted them into dependable bases for the operations of the KPRA.

Back from Sandaohezi, Ningan County, to the Tuman River basin in

August 1935, a KPRA unit won resounding victories and thus brought the great leader's strategic and tactical plan into reality.

The enemy was bogged down and the people's will to fight Japanese imperialism strengthened rapidly.

The great leader led the main units of the KPRA again into the Ningan district so as to further expand and develop the anti-Japanese armed struggle and bring about a fresh upsurge in the Korean revolution in conformity with the requirements of the changed revolutionary situation.

For four to five years after the start of the anti-Japanese armed struggle, the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung, genius of revolution and ever-victorious, iron-willed brilliant commander, blazed the rugged road of struggle, leading the KPRA and the people to a proud victory.

Under his wise guidance, the red flag of the KPRA that flew for the first time in Antu began to flutter, raising the storm of revolution in vast areas of Manchuria and northern Korea. Shattering the underhand machinations of the "Left" opportunists and the sectarian-flunkeys, the Juche of the Korean revolution was firmly upheld and the internal forces of our revolution grew incomparably stronger in the process of the arduous revolutionary struggle.

Drawing on the shining victory won in the first half of the 1930's he prepared a far-sighted plan to raise the anti-Japanese revolutionary war and the Korean revolution as a whole to a higher plane, new upswing, and set out to carry it into practice.

In February 1936 our ranks under his command made vigorous advance toward Nanhutou flying the red flag through a raging snowstorm.

Document generated by Anna’s Archive around 2023-2024 as part of the DuXiu collection
(https://annas-blog.org/duxiu-exclusive.html).

Images have been losslessly embedded. Information about the original file can be found in PDF attachments. Some stats (more in the PDF attachments):
{
  "before_pdg2pic_conversion": {
    "filename": "NDA0Mjc0Mzguemlw",
    "filename_decoded": "40427438.zip",
    "filesize": 12539884,
    "md5": "5a72e287482f8146a2288082b15a63ac",
    "header_md5": "0ac1b8de9eea9afee4f7700028b9cdd7",
    "sha1": "8a1b13c8a7fd826d024221d583ea42bd7696a563",
    "sha256": "6b99883abfe9952b29ab989cb0230a8a69cf9930034d7bde0cb24e1376c221a2",
    "crc32": 600020894,
    "zip_password": "",
    "uncompressed_size": 12767874,
    "pdg_dir_name": "",
    "pdg_main_pages_found": 290,
    "pdg_main_pages_max": 290,
    "total_pages": 295,
    "total_pixels": 7653888
  },
  "after_pdg2pic_conversion": {
    "filename": "NDA0Mjc0Mzguemlw",
    "filename_decoded": "40427438.zip",
    "filesize": 20369843,
    "md5": "11aca04fc55880845a573d7aad41138e",
    "header_md5": "e9726b463c6409b0679e2801d9b94d64",
    "sha1": "25cf6756efebe1b6b90c945a6ebb32afad76a259",
    "sha256": "4a335aad224e1b6c9825b008a018ab80ddb4e05c13bf771fb07a297daf3cff9b",
    "crc32": 3185217057,
    "zip_password": "",
    "uncompressed_size": 20785062,
    "pdg_dir_name": "",
    "pdg_main_pages_found": 290,
    "pdg_main_pages_max": 290,
    "total_pages": 295,
    "total_pixels": 1118945280
  },
  "pdf_generation_missing_pages": false
}